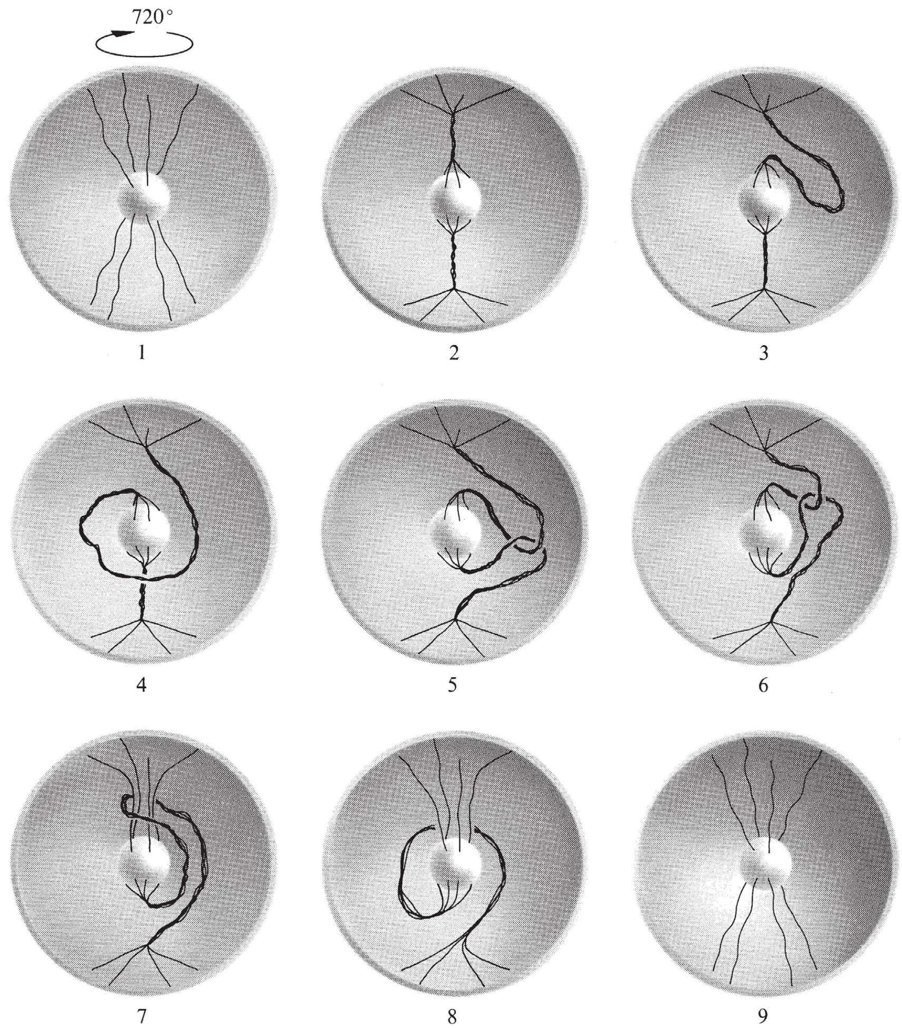


Figure 41.6.
An object is connected to its surroundings by elastic threads as in Figure 41.5. (Eight are shown here; any number could be used.) Rotating the object through 720° and then following the procedure outlined (Edward McDonald) in frames 2–8 (with the object remaining fixed), one finds that the connecting threads are left disentangled, as in frame 9 (lower right).

Such a quantity is known as a spinor. A spinor reverses sign on a 360° rotation. It therefore provides a reasonable means to keep track of the difference between the two inequivalent versions of the cube. More generally, with each orientation-entanglement relation between the cube and its surroundings one can associate a different value of the spinor ξ. Moreover, there is nothing that limits the usefulness of the spinor concept to rotations. Also, for the general combination of boost and rotation, one can write

Lorentz transformation of a spinor

$$\xi \longrightarrow \xi' = L\xi. \qquad (41.51)$$

When the boost and rotation are both infinitesimal, the explicit form of this transformation is simple:

$$\xi' = [1 - (i\,d\theta/2)(\boldsymbol{n}\cdot\boldsymbol{\sigma}) + (d\boldsymbol{\beta}/2)\cdot\boldsymbol{\sigma}]\xi,$$

or, according to (41.1),

$$\begin{pmatrix}\xi'^1\\ \\ \xi'^2\end{pmatrix} = \begin{Vmatrix} 1+\frac{1}{2}(-i\theta_{xy}+\beta_z) & \frac{1}{2}(-i\theta_{yz}-\theta_{zx}+\beta_x-i\beta_y) \\ \frac{1}{2}(-i\theta_{yz}+\theta_{zx}+\beta_x+i\beta_y) & 1+\frac{1}{2}(i\theta_{xy}-\beta_z)\end{Vmatrix} \begin{pmatrix}\xi^1\\ \\ \xi^2\end{pmatrix} \tag{41.52}$$

For any combination of a boost in the z-direction of any magnitude and a finite rotation about the z-axis, one has

$$\begin{pmatrix}\xi'^1\\ \xi'^2\end{pmatrix} = \begin{Vmatrix} e^{-1/2i\theta_{xy}+1/2\beta_z} & 0 \\ 0 & e^{1/2i\theta_{xy}-1/2\beta_z}\end{Vmatrix} \begin{pmatrix}\xi^1\\ \xi^2\end{pmatrix}. \tag{41.53}$$

To keep track of the two components of the spinor, it is convenient and customary to introduce a label (capital Roman letter near beginning of alphabet) that takes on the values 1 and 2; thus (41.51) becomes

$$\xi'^A = L^A{}_B\xi^B. \tag{41.54}$$

The spinor has acquired a significance of its own through one's having pulled out half of the transformation formula

$$X' = LXL^*. \tag{41.55}$$

To be able to recover this formula, one requires the other half as well. It contains the conjugate complex of the Lorentz transformation. Therefore introduce another spinor η that transforms according to the law

Second type of spinor

$$\eta'^{\dot U} = \bar{L}^{\dot U}{}_{\dot V}\eta^{\dot V} \tag{41.56}$$

[$\dot U = \dot 1, \dot 2$; $\dot V = \dot 1, \dot 2$; dots and capital letters near the end of the alphabet are used to distinguish components that transform according to the conjugate complex (no transpose!) of the Lorentz spin matrix].

§41.6. CORRESPONDENCE BETWEEN VECTORS AND SPINORS

Vector regarded as a Hermitian second-rank spinor

To go back from spinors to vectors, note that the spin matrix X in (41.55) has the form

$$X = t + (\boldsymbol{x}\cdot\boldsymbol{\sigma}) = \begin{Vmatrix}(t+z) & (x-iy)\\ (x+iy) & (t-z)\end{Vmatrix} = \begin{Vmatrix} X^{1\dot 1} & X^{1\dot 2}\\ X^{2\dot 1} & X^{2\dot 2}\end{Vmatrix}, \tag{41.57}$$

2

where the labels receive dots or no dots according as they are coupled in (41.55) to L^* or to L. That equation of transformation becomes

$$X'^{A\dot{U}} = L^A{}_B \bar{L}^{\dot{U}}{}_{\dot{V}} X^{B\dot{V}} \tag{41.58}$$

(transpose obtained automatically by ordering of indices; thus $\bar{L}^{\dot{U}}{}_{\dot{V}}$, not $L^{*\dot{U}}{}_{\dot{V}}$). The coefficients in this transformation are identical with the coefficients in the law for the transformation of a "second-rank spinor with one index undotted and the other dotted:"

$$\xi'^A \eta'^{\dot{U}} = L^A{}_B \bar{L}^{\dot{U}}{}_{\dot{V}} \xi^B \eta^{\dot{V}}. \tag{41.59}$$

In this sense one can say that "a 4-vector transforms like a second-rank spinor." To be completely explicit about this connection between a 4-vector and a second-rank spinor, note from (41.57) the relations

$$\begin{aligned} X^{1\dot{1}} &= x^0 + x^3, \\ X^{1\dot{2}} &= x^1 - ix^2, \\ X^{2\dot{1}} &= x^1 + ix^2, \\ X^{2\dot{2}} &= x^0 - x^3. \end{aligned} \tag{41.60}$$

In a more compact form, one has

$$X^{A\dot{U}} = [t + (\boldsymbol{x} \cdot \boldsymbol{\sigma})]^{A\dot{U}} = x^\mu \sigma_\mu{}^{A\dot{U}} \tag{41.61}$$

where σ_0 is the unit matrix. This equation tells immediately how to go from the components of a 4-vector, or "1-index tensor," to the components of the corresponding "1,1-spinor" (one undotted and one dotted index).

With each real 4-vector x^α is associated a 1,1-spinor that is *Hermitian* in the sense that

$$X^{A\dot{U}} = \overline{X^{U\dot{A}}}. \tag{41.62}$$

An example of a Hermitian 1,1-spinor is provided by (41.61). The concept of Hermiticity can be stated in other words, and more generally. Associated with any N,N-spinor Φ with components $\Phi^{A_1 \ldots A_N \dot{U}_1 \ldots \dot{U}_N}$ is the *conjugate complex spinor* $\bar{\Phi}$ with

N,N-spinors and Hermiticity

$$(\bar{\Phi})^{A_1 \ldots A_N \dot{U}_1 \ldots \dot{U}_N} = \overline{(\Phi^{U_1 \ldots U_N \dot{A}_1 \ldots \dot{A}_N})} \tag{41.63}$$

An N,N-spinor is said to be Hermitian when it is equal to its conjugate complex.

§41.7. SPINOR ALGEBRA

Equation (41.53) showed the component ξ'^1 of a spinor rising exponentially with a boost in proportion to the factor $e^{1/2\beta_z}$, and the other component, ξ'^2 falling exponentially. If from two spinors ξ and ζ, there is to be any quantity constructed which is unaffected in value by the boost, it must be formed out of such products

Spinor algebra:

as $\xi^1\zeta^2$ and $\xi^2\zeta^1$. One can restate this product prescription in other language. Introduce the alternating symbols ε^{AB} and ε_{AB} such that $\varepsilon^{12} = \varepsilon_{12} = 1$ and

(1) ε^{AB}, ε_{AB} defined

$$\varepsilon^{AB} = -\varepsilon^{BA}, \qquad \varepsilon_{AB} = -\varepsilon_{BA}, \tag{41.64}$$

the only other nonvanishing components being $\varepsilon^{21} = \varepsilon_{21} = -1$. Define the lower-label spinor ξ_A in terms of the upper-label spinor ξ^A by the equation

(2) raising and lowering spinor indices

$$\xi_A = \xi^B\varepsilon_{BA}, \tag{41.65}$$

with the inverse

$$\xi^B = \varepsilon^{BC}\xi_C. \tag{41.66}$$

Then the scalar product of one spinor by another is defined to be

(3) scalar products of spinors

$$\xi_A\zeta^A. \tag{41.67}$$

The value of this scalar product is unaffected by any boost or rotation or combination thereof:

$$\begin{aligned}\xi'_A\zeta'^A &= \xi'^B\varepsilon_{BA}\zeta'^A \\ &= (L^B{}_D\xi^D)\varepsilon_{BA}(L^A{}_C\zeta^C) \\ &= (\det L)\xi^D\varepsilon_{DC}\zeta^C \\ &= \xi_C\zeta^C.\end{aligned} \tag{41.68}$$

The proof uses the fact that the expression $L^B{}_D\varepsilon_{BA}L^A{}_C$ (1) vanishes when $D = C$, and (2) reduces to the determinant of L (unity!) or its negative when $D = 1$, $C = 2$, or $D = 2$, $C = 1$. Note that the scalar product $\xi^A\zeta_A$ is the negative of the scalar product $\xi_A\zeta^A$. The value of the scalar product of a spinor with itself is automatically zero ("built-in null character of a spinor").

(4) the mapping between vectors and 1,1-spinors

The components of a vector with upper index have been expressed in terms of the components of a 1,1-spinor with upper indices

$$X^{A\dot U} = x^\mu\sigma_\mu{}^{A\dot U}, \tag{41.69}$$

and a similar correlation holds between vector and 1,1-spinor with lower indices; thus,

$$X_{A\dot U} = x_\mu\sigma^\mu{}_{A\dot U}. \tag{41.70}$$

(5) σ^μ defined and related to σ_μ

Here the "associated basic spin matrices" have the components

$$\sigma^\mu{}_{A\dot U} = \eta^{\mu\nu}\sigma_\nu{}^{B\dot V}\varepsilon_{BA}\varepsilon_{\dot V\dot U}, \tag{41.71}$$

or, explicitly,

$$\begin{Vmatrix} \sigma^{\mu}{}_{1\dot{1}} & \sigma^{\mu}{}_{1\dot{2}} \\ \sigma^{\mu}{}_{2\dot{1}} & \sigma^{\mu}{}_{2\dot{2}} \end{Vmatrix} = \begin{cases} -\begin{Vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{Vmatrix} \text{ for } \mu = 0, \\ -\begin{Vmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{Vmatrix} \text{ for } \mu = 1, \\ +\begin{Vmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{Vmatrix} \text{ for } \mu = 2, \\ -\begin{Vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{Vmatrix} \text{ for } \mu = 3. \end{cases} \tag{41.72}$$

The same type of multiplication law holds for these matrices, $(\sigma^x)^2 = (\sigma^y)^2 = (\sigma^z)^2 = 1$, $\sigma^x\sigma^y = -\sigma^y\sigma^x = i\sigma^z$, etc., as for the matrices σ_x, σ_y, σ_z of (41.2). Between the "basic spin matrices," σ_μ, and the "associated basic spin matrices," σ^μ, the following orthogonality and normalization relations obtain:

$$\sigma_\mu{}^{A\dot{U}}\sigma^\mu{}_{B\dot{V}} = -2\,\delta^A_B\,\delta^{\dot{U}}_{\dot{V}} \tag{41.73}$$

and

$$\sigma_\mu{}^{A\dot{U}}\sigma^\nu{}_{A\dot{U}} = -2\,\delta^\nu_\mu. \tag{41.74}$$

One can use these relations to "go back from a quantity expressed as a 1,1-spinor ('spinor equivalent of a vector') to the same quantity expressed directly as a vector (first-rank tensor)." Thus, multiply through (41.61) on both sides by $-\frac{1}{2}\sigma^\nu{}_{A\dot{U}}$, sum over the spinor indices, and employ (41.74) to find the contravariant components of the vector,

$$x^\nu = -\frac{1}{2}\sigma^\nu{}_{A\dot{U}}X^{A\dot{U}}. \tag{41.75}$$

Similarly from (41.70) and (41.73) one finds the covariant components,

$$x_\nu = -\frac{1}{2}\sigma_\nu{}^{A\dot{U}}X_{A\dot{U}}. \tag{41.76}$$

An N-index tensor T lets itself be expressed in spinor language ("spinor equivalent of the tensor") by a generalization of (41.61) or (41.70); thus, for a mixed tensor of third order, one has

(6) the mapping between rank-N tensors and N,N-spinors

$$T_{A\dot{U}}{}^{B\dot{V}C\dot{W}} = \sigma^\alpha{}_{A\dot{U}}\sigma_\beta{}^{B\dot{V}}\sigma_\gamma{}^{C\dot{W}}T_\alpha{}^{\beta\gamma} \tag{41.77}$$

and the converse relation

$$T_\alpha{}^{\beta\gamma} = \left(-\frac{1}{2}\right)^3\sigma_\alpha{}^{A\dot{U}}\sigma^\beta{}_{B\dot{V}}\sigma^\gamma{}_{C\dot{W}}T_{A\dot{U}}{}^{B\dot{V}C\dot{W}}. \tag{41.78}$$

Box 41.1 gives the spinor representation of several simple tensors.

Box 41.1 SPINOR REPRESENTATION OF CERTAIN SIMPLE TENSORS IN THE CONTEXT OF A LOCAL LORENTZ FRAME

Quantity	*Tensor language*	*Spinor language*
General 4-vector	x^α (four complex numbers)	$X^{A\dot{U}}$ (4 complex numbers)
Real 4-vector (example: 4-momentum)	$x^\alpha = \bar{x}^\alpha$ (four real numbers)	$X^{A\dot{U}} = \overline{(X^{U\dot{A}})}$ (2 real components, 1 distinct complex component)
Null 4-vector	$\eta_{\alpha\beta}x^\alpha x^\beta = 0$	$\det X^{A\dot{U}} = 0$ [see (41.57)]; hence there exist two spinors ξ^A and η^U such that $X^{A\dot{U}} = \xi^A\eta^{\dot{U}}$.
Future-pointing real null 4-vector (such as 4-momentum of a photon)	$x^\alpha = \bar{x}^\alpha$ $\eta_{\alpha\beta}x^\alpha x^\beta = 0$ $x^0 > 0$	There exists a spinor ξ^A (two complex numbers, unique up to a common multiplicative phase factor $e^{i\delta}$) such that $X^{A\dot{U}} = \xi^A(\bar{\xi})^{\dot{U}}$
Past-pointing real null 4-vector	$x^0 < 0$	$X^{A\dot{U}} = -\xi^A(\bar{\xi})^{\dot{U}}$.
Real bivector or 2-form (such as Maxwell field)	$F_{[\alpha\beta]}$ (subscript implying $F_{\alpha\beta} = -F_{\beta\alpha}$; six distinct real components)	There exists a symmetric spinor ϕ_{AB} (three distinct complex components ϕ_{11}, ϕ_{12}, ϕ_{22}) such that $F_{A\dot{U}B\dot{V}} = \phi_{AB}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}} + \varepsilon_{AB}(\bar{\phi})_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}$
Real 2-form dual to foregoing real 2-form	${}^*F_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{1}{2}\varepsilon_{\alpha\beta\gamma\delta}F^{\gamma\delta}$	${}^*F_{A\dot{U}B\dot{V}} = -i\phi_{AB}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}} + i\varepsilon_{AB}(\bar{\phi})_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}$ (duality for 2-form corresponds to multiplication of spinor ϕ_{AB} by $-i$)
Real fourth-order tensor with symmetries of Weyl conformal curvature tensor; that is, with symmetries of Riemann curvature tensor and with additional requirement of vanishing Ricci tensor ("empty space;" "vacuum Riemann tensor")	$C_{\alpha\beta\gamma\delta} = C_{([\alpha\beta][\gamma\delta])}$ (antisymmetric in first two indices; antisymmetric in last two indices; symmetric against interchange of first pair with second pair) $C^\alpha{}_{[\beta\gamma\delta]} = 0$ (20 algebraically distinct components, as for the Riemann tensor, reduced to 10 by the further vacuum condition:) $C^\alpha{}_{\beta\alpha\delta} = 0$	There exists a completely symmetric spinor ψ_{ABCD} with five distinct complex components, ψ_{1111} ψ_{1112} ψ_{1122} ψ_{1222} ψ_{2222} such that $C_{A\dot{U}B\dot{V}C\dot{W}D\dot{X}} = \psi_{ABCD}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}\varepsilon_{\dot{W}\dot{X}} + \varepsilon_{AB}\varepsilon_{CD}\bar{\psi}_{\dot{U}\dot{V}\dot{W}\dot{X}}$

In some treatises on spinor analysis, the factor $(-\frac{1}{2})^N$ in equations like (41.78) is eliminated by the following double prescription: (1) insert into the matrices σ_μ and σ^μ a factor $1/\sqrt{2}$ not included above; and (2) use for the standard metric not diag $\eta_{\mu\nu} = (-1, 1, 1, 1)$ as above, but $(1, -1, -1, -1)$. This prescription was not adopted here (1) because the introduction of $1/\sqrt{2}$ in the matrices σ_x, σ_y, σ_z would put them out of line with the Pauli matrices as used for many years throughout

Quantity	*Tensor language*	*Spinor language*
Fully developed Riemann curvature tensor (space where matter is present)	$R_{\alpha\beta\gamma\delta} = R_{[\alpha\beta]\gamma\delta} = R_{\alpha\beta[\gamma\delta]} = R_{([\alpha\beta][\gamma\delta])}$ $R_{\alpha[\beta\gamma\delta]} = 0$ (20 algebraically distinct components)	There exists a completely symmetric spinor ψ_{ABCD} ("Weyl" or "conformal" part of curvature, or part of nonlocal origin) and a scalar Λ (measure of trace of part of curvature of local origin) and a spinor $\Phi_{AB\dot{U}\dot{V}} = \Phi_{(AB)(\dot{U}\dot{V})} = (\bar{\Phi})_{AB\dot{U}\dot{V}}$ (measure of trace-free part of curvature of local origin; last of the three irreducible parts of the curvature tensor) such that $R_{A\dot{U}B\dot{V}C\dot{W}D\dot{X}} = \psi_{ABCD}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}\varepsilon_{\dot{W}\dot{X}}$ $+ \varepsilon_{AB}\varepsilon_{CD}(\bar{\psi})_{\dot{U}\dot{V}\dot{W}\dot{X}}$ $+ 2\Lambda(\varepsilon_{AC}\varepsilon_{BD}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}\varepsilon_{\dot{W}\dot{X}}$ $+ \quad \varepsilon_{AB}\varepsilon_{CD}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{X}}\varepsilon_{\dot{V}\dot{W}})$ $+ \varepsilon_{AB}\Phi_{CD\dot{U}\dot{V}}\varepsilon_{\dot{W}\dot{X}}$ $+ \varepsilon_{CD}\Phi_{AB\dot{W}\dot{X}}\varepsilon_{\dot{U}\dot{V}}.$
Each physical quantity is described by a geometric object. Every local physical quantity is described by a mathematical quantity that transforms under a proper local Lorentz transformation as an "irreducible representation of the group $L\uparrow_{+}$ of proper Lorentz transformations."	Each local physical quantity is described by a tensor with its own rank and specific symmetry properties.	In order to provide the required finite irreducible representation of $L\uparrow_{+}$ to represent a local physical quantity, the associated spinor must be completely symmetric in all of its undotted indices, and also completely symmetric in all its dotted indices [Gel'fand (1963)].

atomic and nuclear physics, and (2) because a positive definite metric within a spacelike hypersurface has the advantage of naturalness for the analysis of the initial-value problem of geometrodynamics and for the definition of what one means by a 3-geometry. The price of the factor $(-\frac{1}{2})^N$ is paid here for these advantages. Conventions that avoid this price are preferable for extensive spinor computations; see, e.g., Pirani (1965) or Penrose (1968a).

§41.8. SPIN SPACE AND ITS BASIS SPINORS

Linear independence of spinors

The "space" of elementary spinors is two-dimensional. Therefore it is spanned by any two linearly independent spinors λ_A and μ_A. Moreover, it is easy to diagnose a pair of spinors for possible linear dependence, that is, for existence of a relation of the form $\mu_A = \text{const}\,\lambda_A$. In this event, the scalar product of μ_A with λ^A, like the scalar product of λ_A with λ^A (41.67) automatically vanishes. Therefore a nonvanishing scalar product

$$\lambda_A \mu^A \neq 0 \tag{41.79}$$

is a necessary and sufficient condition for the linear independence of two spinors.

The general 4-vector lets itself be represented as a linear combination of four basis vectors. Similarly the general spinor lets itself be represented as a linear combination of two basis spinors:

$$\omega^A = \lambda \xi^A + \mu \eta^A. \tag{41.80}$$

Basis spinors and spinor mates

Here it is understood that the term "basis spinor" implies that ξ^A and η^A satisfy the normalization condition

$$\xi_A \eta^A = 1\,(= -\eta_A \xi^A). \tag{41.81}$$

From this condition one derives simple expressions for the expansion coefficients in (41.80):

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda &= -\eta_A \omega^A\,(= \omega_B \eta^B), \\ \mu &= \xi_A \omega^A\,(= -\omega_B \xi^B). \end{aligned} \tag{41.82}$$

Inserting these expansion coefficients back into (41.80) will reproduce any arbitrarily chosen spinor ω^A. In other words, the following equation has to be an identity in the components of ω_B:

$$\omega^A = \varepsilon^{AB}\omega_B \equiv (\xi^A \eta^B - \eta^A \xi^B)\omega_B. \tag{41.83}$$

From this circumstance, it follows that the components of the two basic spinors are linked by the equations

$$\xi^A \eta^B - \eta^A \xi^B = \varepsilon^{AB}. \tag{41.84}$$

Given two basis spinors ξ^A and η^A, one can get two equally good basis spinors by writing

$$\begin{aligned} \xi^A{}_{\text{new}} &= \xi^A, \\ \eta^A{}_{\text{new}} &= \eta^A + \alpha \xi^A, \end{aligned} \tag{41.85}$$

with α any real or complex constant, as one checks at once by substitution into (41.81) or (41.84). The most general "spinor mate" to a given spinor ξ^A, satisfying the normalization condition (41.81), has this form (41.85).

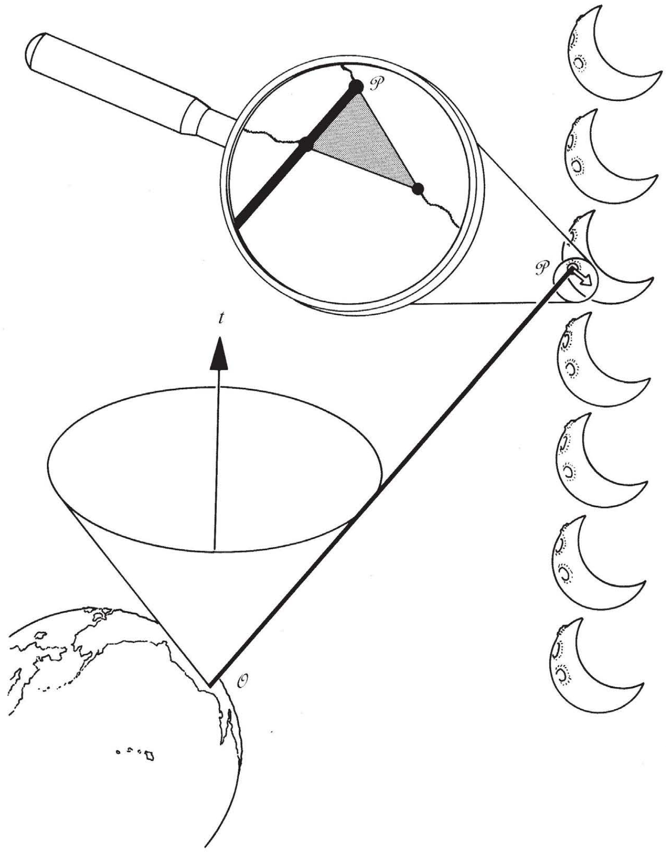


Figure 41.7.
Spinor represented by (1) "flagpole" [Penrose terminology; track of pulse of light; null vector $\mathscr{O}\mathscr{P}$] plus (2) "flag" [arrow ($\mathscr{P} \longrightarrow$) flashed onto surface of moon by laser pulse from earth or, in expanded view in the inset above, a flag itself, substituted for the arrow] plus (3) the orientation-entanglement relation between the flag and its surroundings [symbolized by strings drawn from corners of flag to surroundings]. When the spinor itself is multiplied by a factor $\rho e^{i\sigma}$, the components of the null vector (flagpole) are multiplied by the factor ρ^2 and the flag is rotated through the angle 2σ about the flagpole.

§41.9. SPINOR VIEWED AS FLAGPOLE PLUS FLAG PLUS ORIENTATION-ENTANGLEMENT RELATION

Geometric representation of a spinor:

How can one visualize a spinor? Aim the laser, pull the trigger, and send a megajoule pulse from the here and now (event $\mathscr{O}$) to the there and then (event $\mathscr{P}$: center of the crater Aristarchus, 400,000 km from $\mathscr{O}$ in space, and 400,000 km from $\mathscr{O}$ in light-travel time). The laser has been designed to produce, not a mere spot of light, but an illuminated arrow. Following Roger Penrose, speak of the null vector $\mathscr{O}\mathscr{P}$ as a "flagpole," and of the illuminated arrow as a "flag." A spinor (Figure 41.7) consists of this combination of (1) null flagpole plus (2) flag plus (3) the orientation-entanglement relation between the flag and its surroundings. "Rotate the flag" by repeatedly firing the laser, with a bit of rotation of the laser about its axis between one firing and the next. When the flag has turned through 360° and has come back to its original direction, the spinor has reversed sign. A rotation of the flag about the flagpole through any even multiple of 2π restores the spinor to its original value.

(1) null vector (flagpole), plus

One goes from a spinor ξ, a mathematical object with two complex components ξ^1 and ξ^2, to the geometric object of "flagpole plus flag plus orientation-entanglement relation" in two steps: first the pole, then the flag. Thus, go from the spinor ξ^A to the real null 4-vector of the "pole" by way of the formula

$$x^\alpha \longrightarrow X^{A\dot{U}} = \xi^A(\bar{\xi})^{\dot{U}} \tag{41.86}$$

or

$$\begin{Vmatrix} (t+z) & (x-iy) \\ (x+iy) & (t-z) \end{Vmatrix} = \begin{Vmatrix} \xi^1\bar{\xi}^{\dot{1}} & \xi^1\bar{\xi}^{\dot{2}} \\ \xi^2\bar{\xi}^{\dot{1}} & \xi^2\bar{\xi}^{\dot{2}} \end{Vmatrix}. \tag{41.87}$$

The matrix on the right has its first row identical up to a factor ξ^1/ξ^2 with its second row. Therefore the determinant of the matrix on the right vanishes. So also for the left. Therefore the 4-vector $\mathscr{O}\mathscr{P} = (t, x, y, z)$ is a null vector. One "stretches" this vector by a factor ρ^2 when one multiplies the spinor ξ^A by the nonzero complex number $\lambda = \rho e^{i\sigma}$ (ρ, σ real); however, the vector is unchanged in direction. The 4-vector is also unaffected by the choice of the angle σ. In other words, this null 4-vector is uniquely fixed by the spinor; but the spinor is not fixed with all uniqueness by the 4-vector. To a given 4-vector corresponds a whole family of spinors. They differ from one another by a multiplicative phase factor of the form $e^{i\sigma}$ ("flag factor").

(2) bivector (flag) and its orientation-entanglement relation

Looking further to see the influence of the flag factor showing up, turn from a real vector (four components) generated out of the spinor ξ^A to a real bivector (six components) generated out of the same spinor:

$$\begin{gathered} F^{\mu\nu} \longrightarrow F^{AB\dot{U}\dot{V}} = \xi^A\xi^B\epsilon^{\dot{U}\dot{V}} + \epsilon^{AB}(\bar{\xi})^{\dot{U}}(\bar{\xi})^{\dot{V}}, \\ \mu \longrightarrow A\dot{U};\ \nu \longrightarrow B\dot{V}. \end{gathered} \tag{41.88}$$

That this quantity has no more than six distinct components ($F^{\mu\nu} = -F^{\nu\mu}$) follows from interchanging A with B and $\dot{U}$ with $\dot{V}$, and noting the resultant change in sign on the righthand side of (41.88). To unfold the meaning of this bivector, look in (41.88) for every appearance of the alternating factor ε^{AB}. Wherever such a factor appears, insert the expression (41.84) for this factor in terms of the starting spinor ξ^A and insert the additional spinor η^A that is needed, along with ξ^A, to supply a basis for all spinors. In this way, find

$$\begin{aligned} F^{\mu\nu} \longrightarrow F^{AB\dot{U}\dot{V}} &= \xi^A\xi^B(\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}\bar{\eta}^{\dot{V}} - \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}}\bar{\xi}^{\dot{V}}) + (\xi^A\eta^B - \eta^A\xi^B)\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}\bar{\xi}^{\dot{V}} \\ &= \xi^A\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}(\xi^B\bar{\eta}^{\dot{V}} + \eta^B\bar{\xi}^{\dot{V}}) - (\xi^A\bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + \eta^A\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}})\xi^B\bar{\xi}^{\dot{V}} \\ &= X^{A\dot{U}}Y^{B\dot{V}} - Y^{A\dot{U}}X^{B\dot{V}} \longrightarrow x^\mu y^\nu - y^\mu x^\nu. \end{aligned} \tag{41.89}$$

Thus the 2,2-spinor built from ξ^A represents a bivector constructed out of the two 4-vectors $\boldsymbol{x}$ and $\boldsymbol{y}$. Of these, the first is the "real null vector of the flagpole," already seen to be determined uniquely by the spinor ξ^A. The second vector,

$$y^\alpha \longrightarrow Y^{A\dot{U}} = \xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}, \tag{41.90}$$

is also determined by ξ^A, but not uniquely, because the "spinor mate," η^A, to ξ^A is not unique. Go from one choice of mate, η^A, to a new choice of mate (equation 41.85),

$$\eta^A{}_{\text{new}} = \eta^A + \alpha \xi^A. \tag{41.91}$$

Then the real 4-vector y^μ goes to the new real 4-vector

$$y^\mu{}_{\text{new}} = y^\mu + (\alpha + \bar{\alpha}) x^\mu. \tag{41.92}$$

Were the 4-vector $\boldsymbol{y}$ unique, there would project out from the flagpole, not a flag but an arrow. The range of values open for the real constant $\alpha + \bar{\alpha}$ makes one arrow into many arrows, all coplanar; hence the flag of Penrose. Otherwise stated, the choice of a spinor ξ^A fixes no individual arrow, but does fix the totality of the collection of arrows, and thus uniquely specifies the flag.

The 4-vector $\boldsymbol{y}$ (and with it $\boldsymbol{y}_{\text{new}}$) is orthogonal to the null 4-vector $\boldsymbol{x}$,

$$\begin{aligned} \boldsymbol{x} \cdot \boldsymbol{y} = x_\beta y^\beta &= -\frac{1}{2} X_{A\dot{U}} Y^{A\dot{U}} \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} \xi_A \bar{\xi}_{\dot{U}} (\xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}) = 0, \end{aligned} \tag{41.93}$$

and spacelike,

$$\begin{aligned} \boldsymbol{y} \cdot \boldsymbol{y} &= -\frac{1}{2} (\xi_A \bar{\eta}_{\dot{U}} + \eta_A \bar{\xi}_{\dot{U}})(\xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}) \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} (\xi_A \eta^A)(\bar{\eta}_{\dot{U}} \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}) - \frac{1}{2} (\eta_A \xi^A)(\bar{\xi}_{\dot{U}} \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}}) = 1 \end{aligned} \tag{41.94}$$

("unit length of flag").

Multiplication of the spinor ξ^A by the "flag factor" $e^{i\sigma}$ rotates the flag about the flagpole by the angle 2σ, because the spinor mate, η^A, of ξ^A is multiplied by the factor $e^{-i\sigma}$ [see the normalization condition (41.81)]. These changes alter the vector $\boldsymbol{y}$ to a rotated vector $\boldsymbol{y}_{\text{rot}}$, with

Rotation of flag about flagpole

$$\begin{aligned} y^\alpha_{\text{rot}} \longrightarrow Y^{A\dot{U}}_{\text{rot}} &= e^{2i\sigma} \xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + e^{-2i\sigma} \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}} \\ &= \cos 2\sigma (\xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} + \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}) + \sin 2\sigma (i \xi^A \bar{\eta}^{\dot{U}} - i \eta^A \bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}) \\ &\longrightarrow y^\alpha \cos 2\sigma + z^\alpha \sin 2\sigma. \end{aligned} \tag{41.95}$$

Here the 4-vector $\boldsymbol{z}$ shares with the vector $\boldsymbol{y}$ these properties: it is (1) real, (2) spacelike, (3) of unit magnitude, (4) orthogonal to the null 4-vector $\boldsymbol{x}$ of the flagpole, and (5) uniquely specified by the original spinor ξ^A up to the additive real multiple $(\alpha + \bar{\alpha})$ of $\boldsymbol{x}$. In addition, $\boldsymbol{z}$ and $\boldsymbol{y}$ are orthogonal. Thus $\boldsymbol{y}$ and $\boldsymbol{z}$ provide basis vectors in the two-dimensional space in which—to overpictorialize—the "tip of the flag" undergoes its rotation.

Equations relating spinor, flagpole, and flag

Recapitulate by returning to the laser pulse. Two numbers, such as the familiar polar angles θ (angle with the z-axis) and ϕ (azimuth around z-axis from x-axis) tell the direction of its flight. A third number, r, gives the distance to the moon and also the travel time for light to reach the moon. A fourth number, an angle ψ, tells the azimuth of the illuminated arrow shot onto the surface of the moon, this azimuth to be measured from the $\boldsymbol{e}_\theta$ direction (where $\psi = 0$), around the flagpole in a righthanded sense. Then the spinor associated with the flagpole plus flag (rotated arrow) is

$$\begin{pmatrix} \xi^1 \\ \xi^2 \end{pmatrix} = (2r)^{1/2} \begin{pmatrix} \cos(\theta/2) e^{-i\phi/2 + i\psi/2} \\ \sin(\theta/2) e^{i\phi/2 + i\psi/2} \end{pmatrix} \tag{41.96}$$

according to the conventions adopted here [see (41.87)]. The mate η_A to this spinor, unique up to an additive multiple of ξ^A, is

$$\begin{pmatrix} \eta^1 \\ \eta^2 \end{pmatrix} = (2r)^{-1/2} \begin{pmatrix} -\sin(\theta/2) e^{-i\phi/2 - i\psi/2} \\ \cos(\theta/2) e^{i\phi/2 - i\psi/2} \end{pmatrix}. \tag{41.97}$$

The 4-vector of the flagpole determined by ξ^A is found from (41.87):

$$\begin{pmatrix} x^0 \\ x^1 \\ x^2 \\ x^3 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} r \\ r \sin\theta \cos\phi \\ r \sin\theta \sin\phi \\ r\cos\theta \end{pmatrix}. \tag{41.98}$$

To determine the flag itself, one requires, in addition to x^α, the unit spacelike 4-vector y^α, normal to x^α, and unique up to an additive real multiple of x^α. This vector is evaluated by use of (41.90) and has the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} y^0 \\ y^1 \\ y^2 \\ y^3 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ \cos\theta \cos\phi \cos\psi + \sin\phi \sin\psi \\ \cos\theta \sin\phi \cos\psi - \cos\phi \sin\psi \\ -\sin\theta \cos\psi \end{pmatrix}. \tag{41.99}$$

From these expressions for x^μ and y^μ, one calculates the components of the bivector ("flag") $F^{\mu\nu} = x^\mu y^\nu - y^\mu x^\nu$ by simple arithmetic.

§41.10. APPEARANCE OF THE NIGHT SKY: AN APPLICATION OF SPINORS

Attention has gone here to extracting all four pieces of information contained in a spinor: separation in time (equal to separation in space), direction in space, and

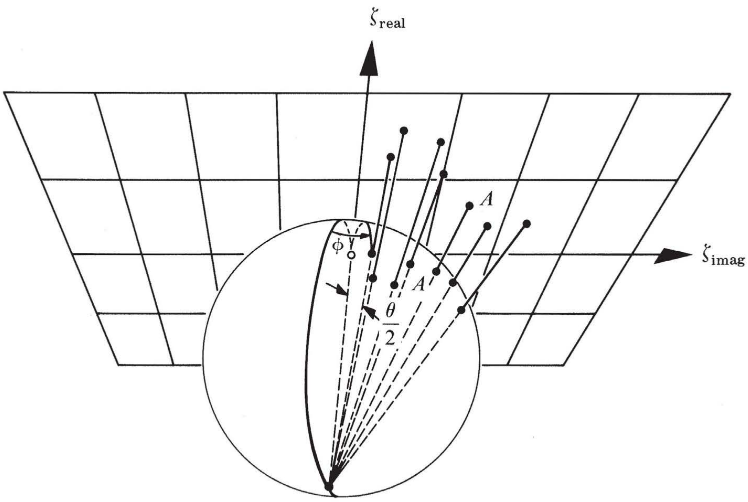


Figure 41.8.
Representation of a direction in space (one of the stars of the Big Dipper, regarded as a point on the celestial sphere) as a point in the complex ζ plane (ζ = ratio ξ^2/ξ^1 of spinor components) by stereographic projection from the South Pole.

rotation about that direction. Turn now to an application where not all that information is needed. Look at the night sky and ask (1) how to describe its appearance and (2) how to change that appearance. As one way to describe its appearance, give the direction of each star. Abandon any concern about the distance of the star, and any concern about any rotation ψ about the flagpole. In other words, the complex factor

Spinors used to analyze "Lorentz transformations" of appearance of night sky

$$(2r)^{1/2}e^{i\psi/2}$$

common to ξ^1 and ξ^2 drops from attention. All that is left as significant is the ratio ζ of these spinor components:

$$\zeta = \xi^2/\xi^1 = \tan(\theta/2)e^{i\phi}. \tag{41.100}$$

To give the one complex number ζ ("stereographic coordinate;" Figure 41.8) for each star in the sky is to catalog the pattern of the stars.

Let the observer change his stance. The celestial sphere appears to rotate. Or let him rocket past his present location in the direction of the North Star with some substantial fraction of the velocity of light. To him all that portion of the celestial sphere is opened out, as if by a magnifying glass. To compensate, the remaining stars are packed into a smaller angular compass. Any such rotation or boost or combination of rotation and boost being described in spinor language by a transformation of the form

$$\xi^A \longrightarrow \xi^A_{\rm new} = L^A{}_B\xi^B, \tag{41.101}$$

implies a transformation of the complex stereographic coordinate of any given star of the form

$$\zeta \longrightarrow \zeta_{\text{new}} = \frac{\xi^2_{\text{new}}}{\xi^1_{\text{new}}} = \frac{L^2{}_2\zeta + L^2{}_1}{L^1{}_2\zeta + L^1{}_1}. \tag{41.102}$$

In the special case of a boost in the z-direction with velocity parameter α (velocity $\beta = \tanh\alpha$), the off-diagonal components $L^1{}_2$ and $L^2{}_1$ vanish. The magnification of the overhead sky then expresses itself in the simple formula

$$\zeta_{\text{new}} = e^{\alpha}\zeta$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} \phi_{\text{new}} &= \phi, \\ \tan(\theta_{\text{new}}/2) &= e^{\alpha}\tan(\theta/2). \end{aligned} \tag{41.103}$$

Contrary to this prediction and false expectation, no magnification at all is achieved of the regions around the North Star by moving with high velocity in that direction. On the contrary, any photon coming in from a star a little off that direction, with a little transverse momentum, keeps that transverse momentum in the new frame; but its longitudinal momentum against the observer is augmented by his motion. Thus the ratio of the momenta is decreased, and the observed angle relative to the North Star is also decreased. The consequence is not magnification, but diminution ("looking through the wrong end of a telescope"). The correct formula is not (41.103) but

$$\tan(\theta_{\text{new}}/2) = e^{-\alpha}\tan(\theta/2) \tag{41.104}$$

(reversal of the sign of α). The reason for this correction is not far to seek. The spinor analysis so far had dealt with an outgoing light pulse, and a 4-vector with positive time component. That feature was built into the formula adopted to tie the spinor to the 4-vector,

$$r\mathbf{1} + (\boldsymbol{r}\cdot\boldsymbol{\sigma}) \equiv X = \|\xi^A\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}\|. \tag{41.105}$$

In contrast the 4-vector that reaches back to the origin of an incoming photon has a time component that is negative (or, alternatively, sign-reversed space components)! For any null 4-vector with negative time component, one employs instead of (41.105) the formula

$$X = -\|\xi^A\bar{\xi}^{\dot{U}}\|. \tag{41.106}$$

It is enough to mention here this point of principle without going through the details that give the altered sign for α in (41.104). From now on, to preserve the previous arithmetic, change the problem. Deal, not with incoming photons, but with outgoing photons. Replace the receiving telescope by the projector of a planetarium. It projects out into space a separate beam of light for each star of the Big Dipper and also one for the North Star itself. Let an observer move in the positive z-direction with velocity parameter α. In his frame of reference the beams actually will be widened out in full accord with (41.103).

"The magnification process changes the size of the Big Dipper but not its shape."

Lorentz transformations leave angles on sky unchanged ("conformal invariance")

This statement is at the same time true and false. It is true of the Dipper and of any other constellation to the extent that the angular dimensions of that constellation can be idealized to be small compared to the entire compass of the sky. It is false in the sense that any well-rounded projected constellation, however small it may appear to an observer at rest with respect to the earth, can always be so "opened out" by the observer putting on any sufficiently high velocity, the observer still being near the earth, that the constellation encompasses a major fraction of the sky.

That the "Lorentz-transformation-induced magnification" of a small object does not change its shape can be seen in three ways. (1) Stereographic projection (Figure 41.8) and "fractional linear transformation" (41.102) are both known to leave all angles unchanged ["conformal invariance;" see for example Penrose (1959)] and known even to turn every old circle into a new circle. (2) Consider a given star, M, in the constellation and immediate neighbors, L and N, just below it and just above it in the count of the members of that constellation. Consider the flagpole pointed at M and the flag pointed first from M to L, then from M to N. The flag has turned about the flagpole through an angle ψ. The two corresponding spinors therefore differ by a phase factor $e^{i\psi/2}$. They differ in no other way. After an arbitrary Lorentz transformation they still differ by the phase factor $e^{i\psi/2}$, and in no other way. The angle between the arcs ML and MN on the celestial sphere therefore remains at its original value ψ after the Lorentz transformation (again conformal invariance of patterns on the celestial sphere!). (3) An even more elementary calculation shows that infinitesimal arc lengths on the unit celestial sphere in the direction of increasing θ and arc lengths in the direction of increasing ϕ are magnified in the same proportion, thus leaving unchanged the angle between arc and arc (conformal invariance). Thus, consider a photon shot out from the planetarium projector to a point on the celestial sphere ("planetarium version of a Big-Dipper star") with inclination θ to the z-axis, as seen by an observer at rest relative to the earth. From the standard laws of transformation of angles in a Lorentz transformation ("aberration"; Box 2.4), one has for the sine of the transformed angle

$$\sin\theta_{\text{new}} = \frac{(1-\beta^2)^{1/2}}{1-\beta\cos\theta}\sin\theta \tag{41.107}$$

and (by differentiating the expression for the cosine of the transformed angle)

$$d\theta_{\text{new}} = \frac{(1-\beta^2)^{1/2}}{1-\beta\cos\theta}\,d\theta. \tag{41.108}$$

From these expressions it follows at once that the inclination, relative to a meridian line, on the transformed celestial sphere is identical to the direction, relative to the same meridian line, on the original celestial sphere:

$$\begin{aligned}\tan\begin{pmatrix}\text{new}\\\text{inclination}\end{pmatrix} &= \frac{\sin\theta_{\text{new}}\,d\phi_{\text{new}}}{d\theta_{\text{new}}} = \frac{\sin\theta\,d\phi}{d\theta}\\ &= \tan\begin{pmatrix}\text{original}\\\text{inclination}\end{pmatrix}\end{aligned} \tag{41.109}$$

(again conformal invariance!).

So much for the elementary spinor and what it has to do with a null vector, with a "flagpole" pointed to the celestial sphere, and with rotation of a "flag" about such a flagpole.

§41.11. SPINORS AS A POWERFUL TOOL IN GRAVITATION THEORY

Spinor formalism in curved spacetime

Just as vectors, tensors, and differential forms are easily generalized from flat spacetime to curved, so are spinors.

Each event $\mathscr{P}$ in curved spacetime possesses a tangent space. In that tangent space reside and operate all the vectors, tensors, and forms located at $\mathscr{P}$. The geometry of the tangent space is Lorentzian ("local Lorentz geometry at $\mathscr{P}$"), since the scalar product of any two vectors $\boldsymbol{u}$ and $\boldsymbol{v}$ at $\mathscr{P}$, expressed in an orthonormal frame at $\mathscr{P}$, is

$$\boldsymbol{u} \cdot \boldsymbol{v} = \boldsymbol{g}(\boldsymbol{u}, \boldsymbol{v}) = \eta_{\hat{\alpha}\hat{\beta}} u^{\hat{\alpha}} v^{\hat{\beta}}.$$

Thus, there is no mathematical difference between the tangent space at $\mathscr{P}$ on the one hand, and flat spacetime on the other. Whatever mathematical can be done in the one can also be done in the other. In particular, *the entire formalism of spinors, developed originally in flat spacetime, can be carried over without change to the tangent space at the arbitrary event $\mathscr{P}$ in curved spacetime.*

Let it be done. Now spinors reside at every event in curved spacetime; and at each event one can translate back and forth between spinor language and tensor language, using the equations (valid in orthonormal frames) of §§41.6 and 41.7.

Spinors needed when analyzing fermions in gravitational fields

Spinors in curved spacetime are an indispensible mathematical tool, when one wishes to study the influence of gravity on quantized particles of half-integral spin (neutrinos, electrons, protons, . . .). Consider, for example, Hartle's (1971) proof that a black hole cannot exert any long-range, weak-interaction forces on external matter (i.e., that a black hole has no "weak-interaction hair"). His proof could not function without a spinor description of neutrino fields in curved spacetime. Similarly for Wheeler's (1971b) analysis of the quasibound states of an electron in the gravitational field of a small black hole (gravitational radius $\sim 10^{-13}$ cm): it requires solving the Dirac equation for a spin-$\frac{1}{2}$ particle in the curved spacetime geometry of Schwarzschild. For a detailed discussion of the Dirac equation in curved spacetime see, e.g., Brill and Wheeler (1957).

Equivalence of spinor and tensor formalisms

To use the mathematics of spinors, one need not be dealing with quantum theory or with particles of half-integral spin. The spinor formalism is perfectly applicable in situations where only integral-spin entities (scalars, vectors, tensors) are in view, and where in fact, the spinor formalism is fully equivalent to the tensor formalism that pervades earlier chapters of this book. Equations (41.77) and (41.78) provide the translation from one formalism to the other, once an orthonormal frame has been chosen at each event in spacetime.

Certain types of problems in gravitation theory are far more tractable in the language of spinors than in the language of tensors. Examples are as follows.

(1) Geometric Optics (the theory of "null congruences of geodesics")

Applications of spinor formalism in classical gravitation theory

Here spinors make almost trivial the lengthy tensor algebra needed in derivations of the "focusing theorem" [equation (22.37)]; and they yield an elegant, simple formalism for discussing and calculating how, with increasing affine parameter, a bundle of rays alters its size ("expansion"), its shape ("shear"), and its orientation ("rotation"). See, e.g., Sachs (1964), Pirani (1965), or Penrose (1968a) for a review and the original references.

(2) Radiation Theory in Curved Spacetime (both gravitational and electromagnetic)

Spinors provide the most powerful of all formalisms for decomposing radiation fields into spherical harmonics and for manipulating their decomposed components. See, for example, Price's (1972a,b) analysis of how a perturbed Schwarzschild black hole radiates away all its radiatable perturbations, be they electromagnetic perturbations, gravitational perturbations, or perturbations in a fictitious field of spin 17; see, similarly, the analysis by Fackerell and Ipser (1972) and by Ipser (1971) of electromagnetic perturbations of a Kerr black hole, and the analysis by Teukolsky (1972) of gravitational perturbations of a Kerr hole. Spinors also yield an elegant and powerful analysis of the "$1/r$" expansion of a radiation field flowing out from a source into asymptotically flat space. Among its results is a "*peeling theorem,*" which describes the algebraic properties of the coefficients in a $1/r$ expansion of the Riemann tensor. See, e.g., Sachs (1964) or Pirani (1965) for reviews and original references.

(3) Algebraic Properties of Curvature Tensors

The spinor formalism is a more powerful method than any other for deriving the "Petrov-Pirani algebraic classification of the conformal curvature tensor," and for proving theorems about algebraic properties of curvature tensors. See, e.g., Sachs (1964) or Pirani (1965) or Penrose (1968a) for reviews and references.

Of course, the spinor formalism, like any formalism, has its limitations. For example, many of the elementary problems of gravitation theory, and a large fraction of the most difficult ones, would be more difficult in the language of spinors than in the language of tensors! But for certain classes of problems, especially those where null vectors play a central role, spinors are a most valuable tool.

Cartan gave spinors to the world's physics and mathematics. His text (American edition, 1966) is an important reference to the subject.

CHAPTER 42

REGGE CALCULUS

§42.1. WHY THE REGGE CALCULUS?

This chapter is entirely Track 2. As preparation for it, Chapter 21 (variational principle and initial-value formalism) is needed. It is not needed as preparation for any later chapter, though it will be helpful in Chapter 43 (dynamics of geometry).

The need for Regge calculus as a computational tool

Gravitation theory is entering an era when situations of greater and greater complexity must be analyzed. Before about 1965 the problems of central interest could mostly be handled by idealizations of special symmetry or special simplicity or both. The Schwarzschild geometry and its generalizations, the Friedmann cosmology and its generalizations, the joining together of the Schwarzschild geometry and the Friedmann geometry to describe the collapse of a bounded collection of matter, the vibrations of relativistic stars, weak gravitational waves propagating in an otherwise flat space: all these problems and others were solved by elementary means.

But today one is pressed to understand situations devoid of symmetry and not amenable to perturbation theory: How do two black holes alter in shape, and how much gravitational radiation do they emit when they collide and coalesce? What are the structures and properties of the singularities at the endpoint of gravitational collapse, predicted by the theorems of Penrose, Hawking, and Geroch? Can a Universe that begins completely chaotic smooth itself out quickly by processes such as inhomogeneous mixmaster oscillations?

To solve such problems, one needs new kinds of mathematical tools—and in response to this need, new tools are being developed. The "global methods" of Chapter 34 provide one set of tools. The Regge Calculus provides another [Regge (1961); see also pp. 467–500 of Wheeler (1964a)].

§42.2. REGGE CALCULUS IN BRIEF

Approximation of smooth geometries by skeleton structures

Consider the geodesic dome that covers a great auditorium, made of a multitude of flat triangles joined edge to edge and vertex to vertex. Similarly envisage space-time, in the Regge calculus, as made of flat-space "simplexes" (four-dimensional item in this progression: two dimensions, triangle; three dimensions, tetrahedron; four dimensions, simplex) joined face to face, edge to edge, and vertex to vertex. To specify the lengths of the edges is to give the engineer all he needs in order to know the shape of the roof, and the scientist all he needs in order to know the geometry of the spacetime under consideration. A smooth auditorium roof can be approximated arbitrarily closely by a geodesic dome constructed of sufficiently small triangles. A smooth spacetime manifold can be approximated arbitrarily closely by a locked-together assembly of sufficiently small simplexes. Thus the Regge calculus, reaching beyond ordinary algebraic expressions for the metric, provides a way to analyze physical situations deprived, as so many situations are, of spherical symmetry, and systems even altogether lacking in symmetry.

Role of Einstein field equation in fixing the skeleton structure

If the designer can give the roof any shape he pleases, he has more freedom than the analyst who is charting out the geometry of spacetime. Given the geometry of spacetime up to some spacelike slice that, for want of a better name, one may call "now," one has no freedom at all in the geometry from that instant on. Einstein's geometrodynamic law is fully deterministic. Translated into the language of the Regge calculus, it provides a means to calculate the edge lengths of new simplexes from the dimensions of the simplexes that have gone before. Though the geometry is deterministically specified, how it will be approximated is not. The original spacelike hypersurface ("now") is approximated as a collection of tetrahedrons joined together face to face; but how many tetrahedrons there will be and where their vertices will be placed is the option of the analyst. He can endow the skeleton more densely with bones in a region of high curvature than in a region of low curvature to get the most "accuracy profit" from a specified number of points. Some of this freedom of choice for the lengths of the bones remains as one applies the geometrodynamic law in the form given by Regge (1961) to calculate the future from the past. This freedom would be disastrous to any computer program that one tried to write, unless the programmer removed all indefiniteness by adding supplementary conditions of his own choice, either tailored to give good "accuracy profit," or otherwise fixed.

Having determined the lengths of all the bones in the portion of skeletonized spacetime of interest, one can examine any chosen local cluster of bones in and by themselves. In this way one can find out all there is to be learned about the geometry in that region. Of course, the accuracy of one's findings will depend on the fineness with which the skeletonization has been carried out. But in principle that is no limit to the fineness, or therefore to the accuracy, so long as one is working in the context of classical physics. Thus one ends up with a catalog of all the bones, showing the lengths of each. Then one can examine the geometry of whatever spacelike surface one pleases, and look into many other questions besides. For this purpose one has only to pick out the relevant bones and see how they fit together.

§42.3. SIMPLEXES AND DEFICIT ANGLES

Figure 42.1 recalls how a smoothly curved surface can be approximated by flat triangles. All the curvature is concentrated at the vertices. No curvature resides at

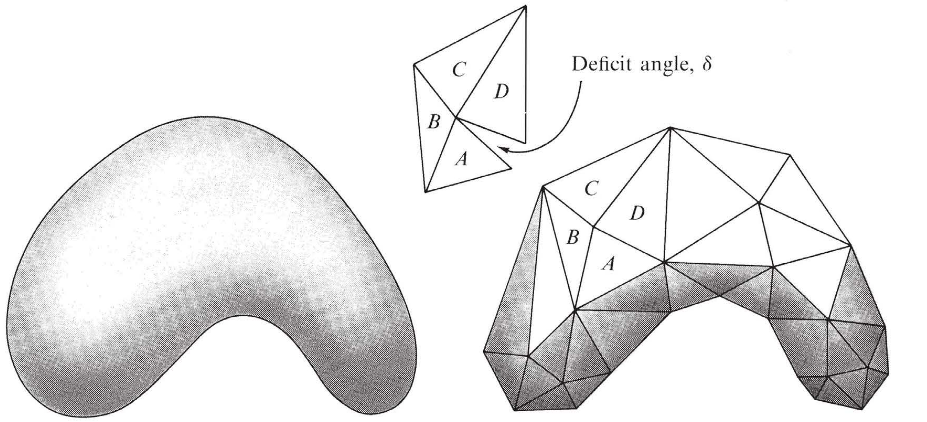


Figure 42.1.
A 2-geometry with continuously varying curvature can be approximated arbitrarily closely by a polyhedron built of triangles, provided only that the number of triangles is made sufficiently great and the size of each sufficiently small. The geometry in each triangle is Euclidean. The curvature of the surface shows up in the amount of deficit angle at each vertex (portion *ABCD* of polyhedron laid out above on a flat surface).

Deficit angle as a skeletonized measure of curvature:

(1) in two dimensions

the edge between one triangle and the next, despite one's first impression. A vector carried by parallel transport from A through B and C to D, and then carried back by another route through C and B to A returns to its starting point unchanged in direction, as one sees most easily by laying out this complex of triangles on a flat surface. Only if the route is allowed to encircle the vertex common to A, B, C, and D does the vector experience a net rotation. The magnitude of the rotation is equal to the indicated deficit angle, δ, at the vertex. The sum of the deficit angles over all the vertices has the same value, 4π, as does the half-integral of the continuously distributed scalar curvature (${}^{(2)}R = 2/a^2$ for a sphere of radius a) taken over the entirety of the original smooth figure,

$$\sum_{\substack{\text{skeleton}\\ \text{geometry}}} \delta_i = \frac{1}{2} \int_{\substack{\text{actual smooth}\\ \text{geometry}}} {}^{(2)}R \, d(\text{surface}) = 4\pi. \tag{42.1}$$

(2) in n (or four) dimensions

Generalizing from the example of a 2-geometry, Regge calculus approximates a smoothly curved n-dimensional Riemannian manifold as a collection of n-dimensional blocks, each free of any curvature at all, joined by $(n - 2)$-dimensional regions in which all the curvature is concentrated (Box 42.1). For the four-dimensional spacetime of general relativity, the "hinge" at which the curvature is concentrated has the shape of a triangle, as indicated schematically in the bottom row of Figure 42.2. In the example illustrated there, ten tetrahedrons have that triangle in common. Between one of these tetrahedrons and the next fits a four-dimensional simplex. Every feature of this simplex is determined by the lengths of its ten edges. One of the features is the angle α between one of the indicated tetrahedrons or "faces" of the simplex and the next. Thus α represents the angle subtended by this simplex

Box 42.1 THE HINGES WHERE THE CURVATURE IS CONCENTRATED IN THE "ANGLE OF RATTLE" BETWEEN BUILDING BLOCKS IN A SKELETON MANIFOLD

Dimensionality of manifold	*2*	*3*	*4*
Elementary flat-space building block:	triangle	tetrahedron	simplex
Edge lengths to define it:	3	4	5
Hinge where cycle of such blocks meet with a deficit angle or "angle of rattle" δ:	vertex	edge	triangle
Dimensionality of hinge:	0	1	2
"Content" of such a hinge:	1	length l	area A
Contribution from all hinges within a given small region to curvature of manifold:	$\sum_{\substack{\text{that}\\ \text{region}}} \delta_i$	$\sum_{\substack{\text{that}\\ \text{region}}} l_i\, \delta_i$	$\sum_{\substack{\text{that}\\ \text{region}}} A_i\, \delta_i$
Continuum limit of this quantity expressed as an integral over the same small region:	$\frac{1}{2}\int {}^{(2)}R({}^{(2)}g)^{1/2}\, d^2x$	$\frac{1}{2}\int {}^{(3)}R({}^{(3)}g)^{1/2}\, d^3x$	$\frac{1}{2}\int {}^{(4)}R(-{}^{(4)}g)^{1/2}\, d^4x$

at the hinge. Summing the angles α for all the simplexes that meet on the given hinge $\mathscr{P}\mathscr{Q}\mathscr{R}$, and subtracting from 2π, one gets the deficit angle associated with that hinge. And by then summing the deficit angles in a given small n-volume with appropriate weighting (Box 42.1), one obtains a number equal to the volume integral of the scalar curvature of the original smooth n-geometry. See Box 42.2.

§42.4. SKELETON FORM OF FIELD EQUATIONS

Einstein-Hilbert variational principle reduced to skeleton form

Rather than translate Einstein's field equations directly into the language of the skeleton calculus, Regge turns to a standard variational principle from which Einstein's law lets itself be derived. It says (see §§21.2 and 43.3) adjust the 4-geometry throughout an extended region of spacetime, subject to certain specified conditions on the boundary, so that the dimensionless integral (action in units of $\hbar$!),

$$I = (c^3/16\pi\hbar G)\int R(-g)^{1/2}\, d^4x, \tag{42.2}$$

is an extremum. This statement applies when space is free of matter and electromag-

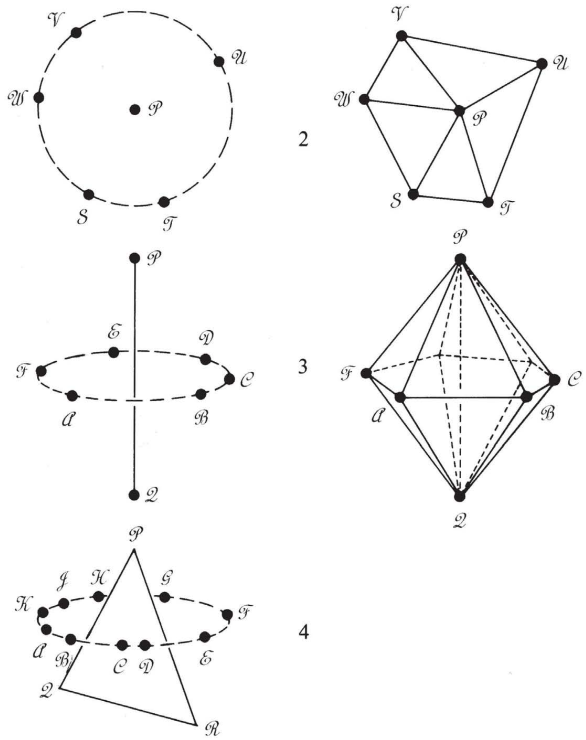


Figure 42.2.
Cycle of building blocks associated with a single hinge. Top row, two dimensions: left, schematic association of vertices $\mathcal{S}$, $\mathcal{T}$, $\mathcal{U}$, $\mathcal{V}$, $\mathcal{W}$ with "hinge" at the vertex $\mathcal{P}$; right, same, but with elementary triangles indicated in full. Middle row, three dimensions: left, schematic; right, perspective representation of the six tetrahedrons that meet on the "hinge" $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}$. Bottom row, four dimensions; shown only schematically. The five vertices $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}\mathcal{C}\mathcal{D}$ belong to one simplex, a four-dimensional region throughout the interior of which space is flat. The five vertices $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}\mathcal{D}\mathcal{E}$ belong to the next simplex; and so on around the cycle of simplexes. The two simplexes just named interface at the tetrahedron $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}\mathcal{D}$, inside which the geometry is also flat. Between that tetrahedron and the next, $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}\mathcal{E}$, there is a certain hyperdihedral angle α subtended at the "hinge" $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}$. The value of this angle is completely fixed by the ten edge lengths of the intervening simplex $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}\mathcal{D}\mathcal{E}$. This dihedral angle, plus the corresponding dihedral angles subtended at the hinge $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}$ by the other simplexes of the cycle, do not in general add up to 2π. The deficit, the "angle of rattle" or deficit angle δ, gives the amount of curvature concentrated at the hinge $\mathcal{P}\mathcal{Q}\mathcal{R}$. There is no actual rattle or looseness of fit, unless one tries to imbed the cycle into an over-all flat four-dimensional space (analog of "stamping on" the collection of triangles, and seeing them open out by the amount of the deficit angle, as indicated in inset in Figure 42.1).

netic fields, a simplification that will be made in the subsequent discussion to keep it from becoming too extended. When in addition all lengths are expressed in units of the Planck length

$$L^* = (\hbar G/c^3)^{1/2} = 1.6 \times 10^{-33}\,\text{cm}, \tag{42.3}$$

and the curvature integral is approximated by its expression in terms of deficit angles, Regge shows that the statement $\delta I = 0$ (condition for an extremum!) becomes

$$(1/8\pi)\,\delta \sum_{\substack{\text{hinges} \\ h=1}}^{H} A_h\,\delta_h = 0. \tag{42.4}$$

Box 42.2 FLOW DIAGRAMS FOR REGGE CALCULUS

A skeleton 4-geometry is completely determined by all its edge lengths. From the edge lengths one gets the integrated curvature by pursuing, for each hinge in the 4-geometry, the following flow diagram:

hinge

↓

cycle of blocks swinging on this hinge

↓

one of these blocks

↓

the two tetrahedral "faces" that set this block off from the blocks before and after it in the cycle of blocks

↓

angle α between these two faces fixed by the block's $n(n-1)/2$ edge lengths

↓

deficit angle at the given hinge is

$$\delta = 2\pi - \sum_{\substack{\text{blocks swinging} \\ \text{on that hinge}}} \alpha$$

↓

contribution to integrated curvature (Box 42.1) is δ times area of hinge

One finds it natural to apply this analysis in either of two ways. First, one can probe a given 4-geometry (given set of edge lengths!) in the sense

edge lengths

↓

curvature

Box 42.2 (*continued*)

Second—and this is the rationale of Regge calculus—one can use the skeleton calculus to deduce a previously unknown 4-geometry from Einstein's geometrodynamic law, proceeding in the direction

initial conditions translated into information about some of the edge lengths

Einstein's equations expressed as conditions on the curvature (deficit angle of each hinge)

fix remainder of the edge lengths (apart from natural options in fineness of zoning)

In the changes contemplated in this variational principle, certain edge lengths are thought of as being fixed. They have to do with the conditions specified at the boundaries of the region of spacetime under study. It is not necessary here to enter into the precise formulation of these boundary conditions, fortunately, since some questions of principle still remain to be clarified about the precise formulation of boundary conditions in general relativity (see §21.12). Rather, what is important is the effect of changes in the lengths of the edges of the blocks in the interior of the region being analyzed, as they augment or decrease the deficit angles at the various hinges. In his basic paper on the subject, Regge (1961) notes that the typical deficit angle δ_h depends in a complicated trigonometric way on the values of numerous edge lengths ℓ_p. However, he proves (Appendix of his paper) that "quite remarkably, we can carry out the variation as if the δ_h were constants," thus reducing the variational principle to the form

$$(1/8\pi) \sum_{\substack{\text{hinges} \\ h=1}}^{H} \delta_h \, \delta A_h = 0. \tag{42.5}$$

Here the change in area of the h-th triangle-shaped hinge, according to elementary trigonometry, is

$$\delta A_h = \frac{1}{2} \sum_p \ell_p \, \delta\ell_p \cot\!\mathrm{an}\, \theta_{ph}. \tag{42.6}$$

In this equation θ_{ph} is the angle opposite to the p-th edge in the triangle. Consequently, Einstein's equations in empty space reduce in skeleton geometry to the form

$$\sum_{\substack{\text{hinges that}\\ \text{have the}\\ \text{given edge}\\ p \text{ in common}}} \delta_h \cot\theta_{ph} = 0, \qquad (p = 1, 2, \ldots), \tag{42.7}$$

Einstein field equation reduced to skeleton form

one equation for each edge length in the interior of the region of spacetime being analyzed.

§42.5. THE CHOICE OF LATTICE STRUCTURE

Two questions arise in the actual application of Regge calculus, and it is not clear that either has yet received the resolution which is most convenient for practical applications of this skeleton analysis: What kind of lattice to use? How best to capitalize on the freedom that exists in the choice of edge lengths? The first question is discussed in this section, the second in the next section.

The choice of lattice structure:

(1) avoiding floppiness

It might seem most natural to use a lattice made of small, nearly rectangular blocks, the departure of each from rectangularity being conditioned by the amount and directionality of the local curvature. However, such building blocks are "floppy." One could give them rigidity by specifying certain angles as well as the edge lengths. But then one would lose the cleanness of Regge's prescription: give edge lengths, and give only edge lengths, and give each edge length freely and independently, in order to define a geometry. In addition one would have to rederive the Regge equations, including new equations for the determination of the new angles. Therefore one discards the quasirectangle in favor of the simplex with its $5 \cdot 4/2 = 10$ edge lengths. This decided, one also concludes that even in flat spacetime the simplexes cannot all have identical edge lengths. Two-dimensional flat space can be filled with identical equilateral triangles, but already at three dimensions it ceases to be possible to fill out the manifold with identical equilateral tetrahedrons. One knows that a given carbon atom in diamond is joined to its nearest neighbors with tetrahedral bonds, but a little reflection shows that the cell assignable to the given atom is far from having the shape of an equilateral tetrahedron.

(2) necessity for unequal edge lengths

Synthesis would appear to be a natural way to put together the building blocks: first make one-dimensional structures; assemble these into two-dimensional structures; these, into three-dimensional ones; and these, into the final four-dimensional structure. The one-dimensional structure is made of points, 1, 2, 3, . . . , alternating with line segments, 12, 23, 34, ... To start building a two-dimensional structure, pick up a second one-dimensional structure. It might seem natural to label its points $1'$, $2'$, $3'$, . . . , etc. However, that labeling would imply a cross-connection between 1 and $1'$, between 2 and $2'$, etc., after the fashion of a ladder. Then the elementary cells would be quasirectangles. They would have the "floppiness" that is to be excluded. Therefore relabel the points of the second one-dimensional structure as $1\frac{1}{2}'$, $2\frac{1}{2}'$, $3\frac{1}{2}'$, etc. The implication is that one cross-connects $2\frac{1}{2}'$ with points 2 and 3 of the original one-dimensional structure, etc. One ends up with something like the

(3) construction of two-dimensional structures

girder structure of a bridge, fully rigid in the context of two dimensions, as desired. The same construction, extended, fills out the plane with triangles. One now has a simple, standard two-dimensional structure. One might mistakenly conclude that one is ready to go ahead to build up a three-dimensional structure: the mistake lies in the tacit assumption that the flat-space topology is necessarily correct.

Let it be the problem, for example, to determine the development in time of a 3-geometry that has the topology of a 3-sphere. This 3-sphere is perhaps strongly deformed from ideality by long-wavelength gravitational waves. A right arrangement of the points is the immediate desideratum. Therefore put aside for the present any consideration of the deformation of the geometry by the waves (alteration of edge lengths from ideality). Ask how to divide a perfect 3-sphere into two-dimensional sheets. Here each sheet is understood to be separated from the next by a certain distance. At this point two alternative approaches suggest themselves that one can call for brevity "blocks" and "spheres."

(4) 3-D structures built from 2-D structures by "method of blocks"

(1) *Blocks.* Note that a 3-sphere lets itself be decomposed into 5 identical, tetrahedron-like solid blocks (5 vertices; 5 ways to leave out any one of these vertices!) Fix on one of these "tetrahedrons." Select one vertex as summit and the face through the other three vertices as base. Give that base the two-dimensional lattice structure already described. Introduce a multitude of additional sheets piled above it as evenly spaced layers reaching to the summit. Each layer has fewer points than the layer before. The decomposition of the 3-geometry inside one "tetrahedron" is thereby accomplished. However, an unresolved question remains; not merely how to join on this layered structure in a regular way to the corresponding structure in the adjacent "tetrahedrons"; but even whether such a regular joinup is at all possible. The same question can be asked about the other two ways to break up the 3-sphere into identical "tetrahedrons" [Coxeter (1948), esp. pp. 292–293: 16 tetrahedrons defined by a total of 8 vertices or 600 tetrahedrons defined by a total of 120 vertices]. One can eliminate the question of joinup of structure in a simple way, but at the price of putting a ceiling on the accuracy attainable: take the stated number of vertices (5 or 8 or 120) as the total number of points that will be employed in the skeletonization of the 3-geometry (no further subdivision required or admitted). Considering the boundedness of the memory capacity of any computer, it is hardly ridiculous to contemplate a limitation to 120 tracer points in exploratory calculations!

(5) 3-D structures from 2-D by "method of spheres"

(2) *Spheres.* An alternative approach to the "atomization" of the 3-sphere begins by introducing on the 3-sphere a North Pole and a South Pole and the hyperspherical angle χ ($\chi = 0$ at the first pole, $\chi = \pi$ at the second, $\chi = \pi/2$ at the equator; see Box 27.2). Let each two-dimensional layer lie on a surface of constant χ (χ equal to some integer times some interval $\Delta\chi$). The structure of this 2-sphere is already to be regarded as skeletonized into elementary triangles ("fully complete Buckminster Fuller geodesic dome"). Therefore the number of "faces" or triangles F, the number of edge lengths E, and the number of vertices V must be connected by the relation of Euler:

$$F - E + V = \begin{pmatrix}\text{a topology-dependent} \\ \text{number or "Euler character"}\end{pmatrix} = \begin{cases} 2 \text{ for 2-sphere,} \\ 0 \text{ for 2-torus.}\end{cases} \tag{42.8}$$

It follows from this relation that it is impossible for each vertex to sit at the center of a hexagon (each vertex the point of convergence of 6 triangles). This being the case, one is not astonished that a close inspection of the pattern of a geodesic dome shows several vertices where only 5 triangles meet. It is enough to have 12 such 5-triangle vertices among what are otherwise all 6-triangle vertices in order to meet the requirements of the Euler relation:

$$
\begin{aligned}
n &\quad \text{5-triangle vertices}\\
V - n &\quad \text{6-triangle vertices}\\
F &= (V-n)(6/3) + n(5/3) \text{ triangles}\\
E &= (V-n)(6/2) + n(5/2) \text{ edges}\\
V &= (V-n)(6/6) + n \text{ vertices}\\
2 = F - E + V &= n/6 \qquad \text{Euler characteristic}\\
n &= 12
\end{aligned}
\tag{42.9}
$$

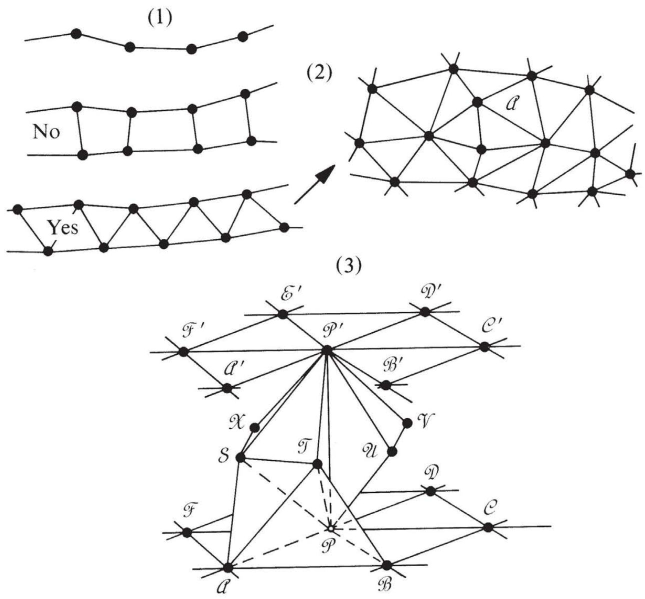
Among all figures with triangular faces, the icosahedron is the one with the smallest number of faces that meets this condition (5-triangle vertices exclusively!)

If each 2-surface has the pattern of vertices of a geodesic dome, how is one dome to be joined to the next to make a rigid skeleton 3-geometry? Were the domes imbedded in a flat 3-geometry, rigidity would be no issue. Each dome would already be rigid in and by itself. However, the 3-geometry is not given to be flat. Only by a completely deterministic skeletonization of the space between the two 2-spheres will they be given rigidity in the context of curved space geometry. (1) Not by running a single connector from each vertex in one surface to the corresponding vertex in the next ("floppy structure"!) (2) Not by displacing one surface so each of its vertices comes above, or nearly above, the center of a triangle in the surface "below." First, the numbers of vertices and triangles ordinarily will not agree. Second, even when they do, it will not give the structure the necessary rigidity to connect the vertex of the surface above to the three vertices of the triangle below. The space between will contain some tetrahedrons, but it will not be throughout decomposed into tetrahedrons. (3) A natural and workable approach to the skeletonization of the 3-geometry is to run a connector from each vertex in the one surface to the corresponding vertex in the next, but to flesh out this connection with additional structure that will give rigidity to the 3-geometry: intervening vertices and connectors as illustrated in Box 42.3.

(6) 4-D structures built from 3-D structures

In working up from the skeletonization of a 3-geometry to the skeletonization of a 4-geometry, it is natural to proceed similarly. (1) Use identical patterns of points in the two 3-geometries. (2) Tie corresponding points together by single connectors. (3) Halfway, or approximately half way between the two 3-geometries insert a whole additional pattern of vertices. Each of these supplementary vertices is "dual" to and lies nearly "below" the center of a tetrahedron in the 3-geometry immediately above. (4) Connect each supplementary vertex to the vertices of the tetrahedron immediately above, to the vertices of the tetrahedron immediately below, and to those other supplementary vertices that are its immediate neighbors. (5) In this way get the edge lengths needed to divide the 4-geometry into simplexes, each of rigidly defined dimensions.

Box 42.3 SYNTHESIS OF HIGHER-DIMENSIONAL SKELETON GEOMETRIES OUT OF LOWER-DIMENSIONAL SKELETON GEOMETRIES



(1) One-dimensional structure as alternation of points and line segments. (2) Two-dimensional structure (a) "floppy" (unacceptable) and (b) rigidified (angles of triangles fully determined by edge lengths). When this structure is extended, as at right, the "normal" vertex has six triangles hinging on it. However, at least twelve 5-triangle vertices of the type indicated at $\mathscr{A}$ are to be interpolated if the 2-geometry is to be able to close up into a 2-sphere. (3) Skeleton 3-geometry obtained by filling in between the skeleton 2-geometry ... $\mathscr{A}\mathscr{B}$ ... $\mathscr{F}\mathscr{P}\mathscr{C}$ ... $\mathscr{E}\mathscr{D}$ ... and the similar structure ... $\mathscr{A}'\mathscr{B}'$ ... $\mathscr{F}'\mathscr{P}'\mathscr{C}'$ ... $\mathscr{E}'\mathscr{D}'$ ... as follows. (a) Insert direct connectors such as $\mathscr{P}\mathscr{P}'$ between corresponding points in the two 2-geometries. (b) Insert an intermediate layer of "supplementary vertices" such as $\mathscr{S}\mathscr{T}\mathscr{U}\mathscr{V}\mathscr{W}\mathscr{X}$.... Each of these supplementary vertices lies roughly halfway between the center of the triangle "above" it and the center of the corresponding triangle "below" it. (c) Connect each such "supplementary vertex" with its immediate neighbors above, below, and in the same plane. (d) Give all edge lengths. (e) Then the skeleton 3-geometry between the two 2-geometries is rigidly specified. It is made up of five types of tetrahedrons, as follows. (1) "Right-through blocks," such as $\mathscr{P}\mathscr{P}'\mathscr{S}\mathscr{T}$ (six of these hinge on $\mathscr{P}\mathscr{P}'$ when $\mathscr{P}$ is a normal vertex; five, when it is a 5-fold vertex, such as indicated by $\mathscr{A}$ at the upper right). (2) "Lower-facing blocks," such as $\mathscr{A}\mathscr{B}\mathscr{P}\mathscr{T}$. (3) "Lower-packing blocks," such as $\mathscr{A}\mathscr{P}\mathscr{S}\mathscr{T}$. (4, 5) Corresponding "upper-facing blocks" and "upper-packing blocks" (not shown). The number of blocks of each kind is appropriately listed here for the two extreme cases of a 2-geometry that consists (a) of a normal hexagonal lattice extending indefinitely in a plane and (b) of a lattice consisting of the minimum number of 5-fold vertices ("type $\mathscr{A}$ vertices") that will permit close-up into a 2-sphere.

2-geometry of upper (or lower) face	*Hexagonal pattern of triangles*	*Icosahedron made of triangles*
Its topology	Infinite 2-plane	2-sphere
Vertices on upper face	V	12
Nature of these vertices	6-fold	5-fold
Edge lengths on upper face	$3V$	$\frac{5}{2}V = 30$
Triangles on upper face	$2V$	20
Number of "supplementary vertices"	$2V$	20
Outer facing blocks	$2V$	20
Outer packing blocks	$3V$	30
Right through blocks	$6V$	60
Inner packing blocks	$3V$	30
Inner facing blocks	$2V$	20

§42.6. THE CHOICE OF EDGE LENGTHS

The choice of edge lengths:

So much for the lattice structure of the 4-geometry; now for the other issue, the freedom that exists in the choice of edge lengths. Why not make the simplest choice and let all edges be light rays? Because the 4-geometry would not then be fully determined. The geometry $g_{\alpha\beta}(x^\mu)$ differs from the geometry $\lambda(x^\mu)\, g_{\alpha\beta}(x^\mu)$, even though the same points that are connected by light rays in the one geometry are also connected by light rays in the other geometry.

(1) choose some timelike, others spacelike

If none of the edges is null, it is nevertheless natural to take some of the edge lengths to be spacelike and some to be timelike. In consequence the area A of the triangle in some cases will be real, in other cases imaginary. In 3-space the parallelogram (double triangle) spanned by two vectors $\boldsymbol{B}$ and $\boldsymbol{C}$ is described by a vector

$$2\boldsymbol{A} = \boldsymbol{B} \times \boldsymbol{C}$$

perpendicular to the two vectors. One obtains the magnitude of $\boldsymbol{A}$ from the formula

$$4A^2 = \boldsymbol{B}^2\boldsymbol{C}^2 - (\boldsymbol{B}\cdot\boldsymbol{C})^2.$$

In 4-space, let $\boldsymbol{B}$ and $\boldsymbol{C}$ be two edges of the triangle. Then, as in three dimensions, $2\boldsymbol{A}$ is *dual* to the bivector built from $\boldsymbol{B}$ and $\boldsymbol{C}$. In other words, if $\boldsymbol{B}$ goes in the t direction and $\boldsymbol{C}$ in the z direction, then $\boldsymbol{A}$ is a bivector lying in the (x, y) plane. Consequently its magnitude A is to be thought of as a *real* quantity. Therefore the appropriate formula for the area A is (Tullio Regge)

$$4A^2 = (\boldsymbol{B}\cdot\boldsymbol{C})^2 - \boldsymbol{B}^2\boldsymbol{C}^2. \tag{42.10}$$

The quantity A is real when the deficit angle δ is real. Thus the geometrically important product $A\delta$ is also real.

2

When the hinge lies in the (x, y) plane, on the other hand, the quantity A is purely imaginary. In that instance a test vector taken around the cycle of simplexes that swing on this hinge has undergone change only in its z and t components; that is, it has experienced a Lorentz boost; that is, the deficit angle δ is also purely imaginary. So again the product $A\delta$ is a purely real quantity.

(2) choose timelike lengths comparable to spacelike lengths

Turn now from character of edge lengths to magnitude of edge lengths. It is desirable that the elementary building blocks sample the curvatures of space in different directions on a roughly equal basis. In other words, it is desirable not to have long needle-shaped building blocks nor pancake-shaped tetrahedrons and simplexes. This natural requirement means that the step forward in time should be comparable to the steps "sidewise" in space. The very fact that one should have to state such a requirement brings out one circumstance that should have been obvious before: the "hinge equations"

$$\sum_{\substack{\text{hinges } h \text{ that} \\ \text{have edge } p \\ \text{in common}}} \delta_h \operatorname{cotan} \theta_{ph} = 0 \qquad (p = 1, 2, \ldots), \tag{42.7}$$

(3) why some lengths must be chosen arbitrarily

though they are as numerous as the edges, cannot be regarded as adequate to determine all edge lengths. There are necessarily relations between these equations that keep them from being independent. The equations cannot determine all the details of the necessarily largely arbitrary skeletonization process. They cannot do so any more than the field equations of general relativity can determine the coordinate system. With a given pattern of vertices (four-dimensional generalization of drawings in Box 42.3), one still has (a) the option how close together one will take successive layers of the structure and (b) how one will distribute a given number of points in space on a given layer to achieve the maximum payoff in accuracy (greater density of points in regions of greater curvature). To prepare a practical computer program founded on Regge calculus, one has to supply the machine not only with the hinge equations and initial conditions, but also with definite algorithms to remove all the arbitrariness that resides in options (a) and (b).

Deficit angles in terms of edge lengths

Formulas from solid geometry and four-dimensional geometry, out of which to determine the necessary hyperdihedral angles α and the deficit angles δ in terms of edge lengths and nothing but edge lengths, are summarized by Wheeler (1964a, pp. 469, 470, and 490) and by C. Y. Wong (1971). Regge (1961) also gives a formula for the Riemann curvature tensor itself in terms of deficit angles and number of edges running in a given direction [see also Wheeler (1964a, p. 471)].

§42.7. PAST APPLICATIONS OF REGGE CALCULUS

Past applications of Regge calculus

Wong (1971) has applied Regge calculus to a problem where no time development shows itself, where the geometry can therefore be treated as static, and where in addition it is spherically symmetric. He determined the Schwarzschild and Reissner-Nordstrøm geometries by the method of skeletonization. Consider successive spheres surrounding the center of attraction. Wong approximates each as an icosahedron. The condition

$$^{(3)}R = 16\pi \begin{pmatrix} \text{energy density} \\ \text{on the 3-space} \end{pmatrix}$$

(§21.5) gives a recursion relation that determines the dimension of each icosahedron in terms of the two preceding icosahedra. Errors in the skeleton representation of the exact geometry range from roughly 10 percent to less than 1 percent, depending on the method of analysis, the quantity under analysis, and the fineness of the subdivision.

Partial skeletonization

Skeletonization of geometry is to be distinguished from mere rewriting of partial differential equations as difference equations. One has by now three illustrations that one can capitalize on skeletonization without fragmenting spacetime all the way to the level of individual simplexes. The first illustration is the first part of Wong's work, where the time dimension never explicitly makes an appearance, so that the building blocks are three-dimensional only. The second is an alternative treatment, also given by Wong, that goes beyond the symmetry in t to take account of the symmetry in θ and ϕ. It divides space into spherical shells, in each of which the geometry is "pseudo-flat" in much the same sense that the geometry of a paper cone is flat. The third is the numerical solution for the gravitational collapse of a spherical star by May and White (1966), in which there is symmetry in θ and ϕ, but not in r or t. This zoning takes place exclusively in the r, t-plane. Each zone is a spherical shell. The difference as compared to Regge calculus (flat geometry within each building block) is the adjustable "conicity" given to each shell. The examples show that the decision about skeletonizing the geometry in a calculation is ordinarily not "whether" but "how much."

§42.8. THE FUTURE OF REGGE CALCULUS

Hopes for the future

In summary, Regge's skeleton calculus puts within the reach of computation problems that in practical terms are beyond the power of normal analytical methods. It affords any desired level of accuracy by sufficiently fine subdivision of the spacetime region under consideration. By way of its numbered building blocks, it also offers a practical way to display the results of such calculations. Finally, one can hope that Regge's truly geometric way of formulating general relativity will someday make the content of the Einstein field equations (Cartan's "moment of rotation"; see Chapter 15) stand out sharp and clear, and unveil the geometric significance of the so-called "geometrodynamic field momentum" (analysis of the boundary-value problem associated with the variational problem of general relativity in Regge calculus; see §21.12).

CHAPTER 43

SUPERSPACE: ARENA FOR THE DYNAMICS OF GEOMETRY

Traveler, there are no paths.
Paths are made by walking.
ANTONIO MACHADO (1940)

This chapter is entirely Track 2. Chapter 21 (initial-value formalism) is needed as preparation for it. In reading it, one will be helped by Chapter 42 (Regge calculus). It is not needed as preparation for any later chapter, but it will be helpful in Chapter 44 (vision of the future).

§43.1. SPACE, SUPERSPACE, AND SPACETIME DISTINGUISHED

Superspace is the arena for geometrodynamics

Superspace [Wheeler (1964a), pp. 459 ff] is the arena of geometrodynamics. The dynamics of Einstein's curved space geometry runs its course in superspace as the dynamics of a particle unfolds in spacetime. This chapter gives one simple version of superspace, and a little impression of alternative versions of superspace that also have their uses. It describes the classical dynamics of geometry in superspace in terms of the Hamilton-Jacobi principle of Boxes 25.3 and 25.4. No version of mechanics makes any shorter the leap from classical dynamics to quantum. Thus it provides a principle ("Einstein-Hamilton-Jacobi or EHJ equation") for the propagation of wave crests in superspace, and for finding where those wave crests give one the classical equivalent of constructive interference ("envelope formation"). In this way one finds the track of development of 3-geometry with time expressed as a sharp, thin "leaf of history" that slices through superspace. The quantum principle replaces this deterministic account with a fuzzed-out leaf of history of finite thickness. In consequence, quantum fluctuations take place in the geometry of space that dominate the scene at distances of the order of the Planck length, $L^* = (\hbar G/c^3)^{1/2} = 1.6 \times 10^{-33}$ cm, and less. The present survey simplifies by considering only the dynamics of curved empty space. When sources are present and are to be taken into account, supplementary terms are to be added, some of the literature on which is listed.

In all the difficult investigations that led in the course of half a century to some understanding of the dynamics of geometry, both classical and quantum, the most

Box 43.1 GEOMETRODYNAMICS COMPARED WITH PARTICLE DYNAMICS

Concept	*Particle dynamics*	*Geometrodynamics*
Dynamic entity	Particle	Space
Descriptors of momentary configuration	x, t ("event")	$^{(3)}\mathcal{G}$ ("3-geometry")
Classical history	$x = x(t)$	$^{(4)}\mathcal{G}$ ("4-geometry")
History is a stockpile of configurations?	Yes. Every point on world line gives a momentary configuration of particle	Yes. Every spacelike slice through $^{(4)}\mathcal{G}$ gives a momentary configuration of space
Dynamic arena	Spacetime (totality of all points x, t)	Superspace (totality of all $^{(3)}\mathcal{G}$'s)

3-geometry is the dynamic object

difficult point was also the simplest: The dynamic object is not spacetime. It is space. The geometric configuration of space changes with time. But it is space, three-dimensional space, that does the changing (see Box 43.1).

Space will be treated here as "closed" or, in mathematical language, "compact," either because physics adds to Einstein's second-order differential equations the requirement of closure as a necessary and appropriate boundary condition [Einstein (1934, p. 52; 1950); Wheeler (1959; 1964c). Hönl (1962); see also §21.12] or because that requirement simplifies the mathematical analysis, or for both reasons together.

Finite-dimensional "truncated superspace"

One can approximate a smooth, closed 3-geometry by a skeleton 3-geometry built out of tetrahedrons, as indicated schematically in Figure 43.1 (see Chapter 42 on the Regge calculus). Specify the 98 edge-lengths in this example to fix all the features of the geometry; and fix these 98 edge-lengths by giving the location of a single point in a space of 98 dimensions. This 98-dimensional manifold, this "truncated superspace," goes over into superspace [Wheeler (1964a), pp. 453, 459, 463, 495] in the idealization in which the tracer points increase in density of coverage without limit. Accounts of superspace with more mathematical detail are given by DeWitt (1967a,b), Wheeler (1970), and Fischer (1970).

Let the representative point move from one location to a nearby location, either in truncated superspace or in full superspace. Then all edge-lengths alter, and the 3-geometry of Figure 43.1 moves as if alive. No better illustration can one easily supply of what it means to speak of the "dynamics of space."

The term "3-geometry" makes sense as well in quantum geometrodynamics as in classical theory. So does superspace. But spacetime does not. Give a 3-geometry, and give its time rate of change. That is enough, under typical circumstances (see Chapter 21) to fix the whole time-evolution of the geometry; enough in other words, to determine the entire four-dimensional spacetime geometry, provided one is

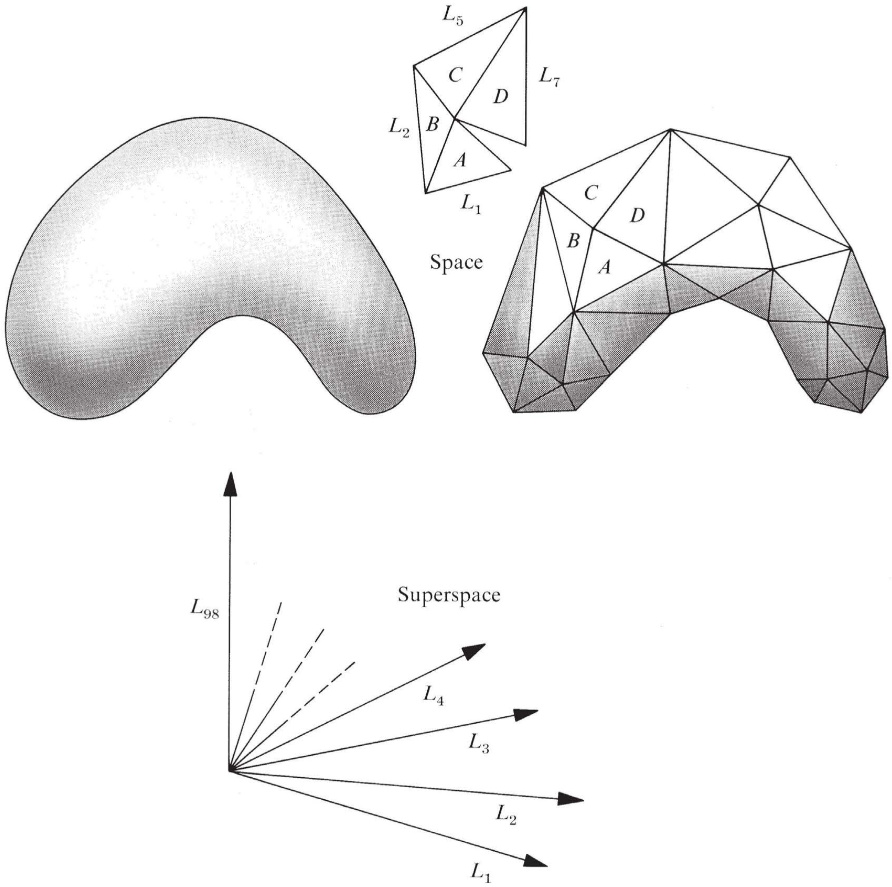


Figure 43.1.
Superspace in the simplicial approximation. Upper left, space (depicted as two-dimensional but actually three-dimensional). Upper right, simplical approximation to space. The approximation can be made arbitrarily good by going to the limit of an arbitrarily fine decomposition. The curvature at a typical location is measured by a deficit angle. This angle is completely determined by the edge lengths (L_1, L_2, . . . L_8 in the figure) of the simplexes that meet at that location. When there are 98 edge lengths altogether in the simplicial representation of the geometry, then this geometry is completely specified by a single point in a 98-dimensional space (lower diagram; "superspace").

The concept of spacetime is incompatible with the quantum principle

considering the problem in the context of classical physics. In the real world of quantum physics, however, one cannot give both a dynamic variable and its time-rate of change. The principle of complementarity forbids. Given the precise 3-geometry at one instant, one cannot also know at that instant the time-rate of change of the 3-geometry. In other words, given the geometrodynamic field coordinate, one cannot know the geometrodynamic field momentum. If one assigns the intrinsic 3-geometry, one cannot also specify the extrinsic curvature.

The uncertainty principle thus deprives one of any way whatsoever to predict, or even to give meaning to, "the deterministic classical history of space evolving in time." *No prediction of spacetime, therefore no meaning for spacetime,* is the verdict of the quantum principle. That object which is central to all of classical general relativity, the four-dimensional spacetime geometry, simply does not exist, except in a classical approximation.

These considerations reveal that the concepts of spacetime and time are not primary but secondary ideas in the structure of physical theory. These concepts are valid in the classical approximation. However, they have neither meaning nor application under circumstances where quantum geometrodynamic effects become important. Then one has to forego that view of nature in which every event, past, present, or future, occupies its preordained position in a grand catalog called "spacetime," with the Einstein interval from each event to its neighbor eternally established. There is no spacetime, there is no time, there is no before, there is no after. The question of what happens "next" is without meaning.

That spacetime is not the right way does not mean there is *no* right way to describe the dynamics of geometry consistent with the quantum principle. Superspace is the key to *one* right way to describe the dynamics (see Figure 43.2).

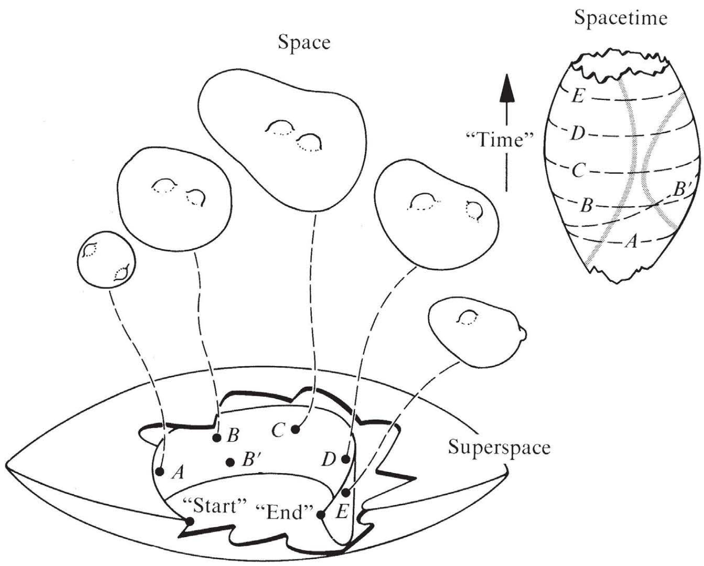


Figure 43.2.
Space, spacetime, and superspace. Upper left: Five sample configurations, A, B, C, D, E, attained by space in the course of its expansion and recontraction. Below: Superspace and these five sample configurations, each represented by a point in superspace. Upper right: Spacetime. A spacelike cut, like A, through spacetime gives a momentary configuration of space. There is no compulsion to limit attention to a one-parameter family of slices, A, B, C, D, E through spacetime. The phrase "many-fingered time" is a slogan telling one not to so limit one's slices, and B' is an example of this freedom in action. The 3-geometries B' and A, B, C, D, E, like all 3-geometries obtained by all spacelike slices whatsoever through the given classical spacetime, lie on a single bent leaf of history, indicated in the diagram, and cutting its thin slice through superspace. A different spacetime, in other words, a different solution of Einstein's field equation, means a different leaf of history (not indicated) slicing through superspace.

§43.2. THE DYNAMICS OF GEOMETRY DESCRIBED IN THE LANGUAGE OF THE SUPERSPACE OF THE $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s

Spacetime is a classical leaf of history slicing through superspace

Given a spacetime, one can construct the corresponding leaf of history slicing through superspace. Conversely, given the leaf of history, one can reconstruct the spacetime.

Consider the child's toy commonly known as "Chinese boxes." One opens the outermost box only to reveal another box; when the second box is opened, there is another box, and so on, until eventually there are dozens of boxes scattered over the floor. Or conversely the boxes can be put back together, nested one inside the other, to reconstitute the original package. The packaging of $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s into a $^{(4)}\mathscr{G}$ is much more sophisticated. Nature provides no monotonic ordering of the $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s. Two of the dynamically allowed $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s, taken at random, will often cross each other one or more times. When one shakes the $^{(4)}\mathscr{G}$ apart, one therefore gets enormously more $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s "spread out over the floor" than might have been imagined. Conversely, when one puts back together all of the $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s lying on the leaf of history, one gets a structure with a rigidity that might not otherwise have been foreseen. This rigidity arises from the infinitely rich interleaving and intercrossing of clear-cut, well-defined $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s one with another.

In summary: (1) Classical geometrodynamics in principle constitutes a device, an algorithm, a rule for calculating and constructing a leaf of history that slices through superspace. (2) The $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s that lie on this leaf of history are YES 3-geometries; the vastly more numerous $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s that do not are NO 3-geometries. (3) The YES $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s are the building blocks of the $^{(4)}\mathscr{G}$ that is classical spacetime. (4) The interweaving and interconnections of these building blocks give the $^{(4)}\mathscr{G}$ its existence, its dimensionality, and its structure. (5) In this structure every $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$ has a rigidly fixed location of its own. (6) In this sense one can say that the "many-fingered time" of each 3-geometry is specified by the very interlocking construction itself. Baierlein, Sharp and Wheeler (1962) say a little more on this concept of "3-geometry as carrier of information about time."

How different from the textbook concept of spacetime! There the geometry of spacetime is conceived as constructed out of elementary objects, or points, known as "events." Here, by contrast, the primary concept is 3-geometry, *in abstracto,* and out of it is derived the idea of event. Thus, (1) the event lies at the intersection of such and such $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s; and (2) it has a timelike relation to (earlier or later than, or synchronous with) some other $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$, which in turn (3) derives from the intercrossings of all the other $^{(3)}\mathscr{G}$'s.

When one turns from classical theory to quantum theory, one gives up the concept of spacetime, except in the semiclassical approximation. Therefore, one gives up any immediate possibility whatsoever of defining the concept, normally regarded as so elemental, of an "event." The theory itself, however, here as always [Bohr and Rosenfeld (1933)], defines in and by itself, in its own natural way, the procedures-in-principle for measuring all those quantities that are in principle measurable.

Quantum theory upsets the sharp distinction between YES 3-geometries and NO

3-geometries. It assigns to each 3-geometry not a YES or a NO, but a probability amplitude,

Probability amplitude for a 3-geometry

$$\psi = \psi({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G}). \tag{43.1}$$

This probability amplitude is highest near the classically forecast leaf of history and falls off steeply outside a zone of finite thickness extending a little way on either side of the leaf.

Were one to take, instead of a physically relevant probability amplitude function, a *typical* solution of the relevant wave equation, one would have to expect to see not one trace of anything like classical geometrodynamics. The typical probability amplitude function is spread all over superspace. No surprise! Already in classical theory one has to reckon with a Hamilton-Jacobi function,

$$S = S({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G}), \tag{43.2}$$

spread out over superspace. Moreover, this "dynamic phase function" of classical geometrodynamics gives at once the phase of ψ, according to the formula

$$\psi({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G}) = \begin{pmatrix}\text{slowly varying} \\ \text{amplitude function}\end{pmatrix} e^{(i/\hbar)S({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G})}, \tag{43.3}$$

indication enough that ψ and S are both unlocalized.

Dynamics first clearly becomes recognizable when sufficiently many such spread-out probability amplitude functions are superposed to build up a localized wave packet, as in the elementary examples of Boxes 25.3 and 25.4; thus,

Wave packet recovers classical geometrodynamics

$$\psi = c_1\psi_1 + c_2\psi_2 + \cdots. \tag{43.4}$$

Constructive interference occurs where the phases of the several individual waves agree:

$$S_1({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G}) = S_2({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G}) = \cdots. \tag{43.5}$$

This is the condition that distinguishes YES 3-geometries from NO 3-geometries. It is the tool for constructing a leaf of history in superspace. It is the key to the dynamics of geometry. Moreover, it is an equation that says not one word about the quantum principle. It is not surprising that the equation of constructive interference in (43.5) makes the leap from classical theory to quantum theory the shortest.

§43.3. THE EINSTEIN-HAMILTON-JACOBI EQUATION

Should one write down a differential equation for the Hamilton-Jacobi function $S({}^{(3)}\mathscr{G})$, solve it, and then analyze the properties of the solution? The exact opposite is simpler: look at the properties of the solution, and from that inspection find out what equation the dynamic phase or action S must satisfy.

Hilberts' principle of least action reads

$$I_{\text{Hilbert}} = (1/16\pi)\int {}^{(4)}R(-g)^{1/2}\, d^4x = \text{extremum}. \tag{43.6}$$

After one separates off complete derivatives in the integrand, what is left [see equations (21.13) and (21.95)] becomes

$$\begin{aligned}(1/16\pi)I_{\text{ADM}} = I_{\text{true}} = (1/16\pi)\int \Big\{&\pi^{ij}\,\partial g_{ij}/\partial t + Ng^{1/2}R \\ &+ Ng^{-1/2}\left[\frac{1}{2}(\operatorname{Tr}\boldsymbol{\pi})^2 - \operatorname{Tr}(\boldsymbol{\pi}^2)\right] + 2N_i\pi^{ij}{}_{|j}\Big\}\, d^4x.\end{aligned} \tag{43.7}$$

In (43.7), but not in (43.6), g stands for the determinant of the three-dimensional metric tensor, g_{ij}, and R for the scalar curvature invariant of the 3-geometry; the suffix $^{(3)}$ is omitted for simplicity. The integral is extended from (1) a spacelike hypersurface on which a 3-geometry is given with metric $g_{ij}'(x, y, z)$ to (2) a spacelike hypersurface on which a 3-geometry is given with metric $g_{ij}''(x, y, z)$. Whatever is adjustable in the chunk of spacetime between is now to be considered as having been adjusted to extremize the integral. Therefore the value of the integral I_{ADM} becomes a functional of the metrics on the two hypersurfaces and nothing more.

Next, holding fixed the metric $g'_{ij}(x, y, z)$ on the earlier hypersurface, change slightly or even more than slightly the metric on the later hypersurface. Solve the new variation problem and get a new value of I_{ADM}. Proceeding further in this way, for each new g_{ij}'' one gets a new value of I_{ADM}. Call the functional I_{ADM} of the metric defined in this way "Hamilton's principal function," or the "action" or the "dynamic path length,*" $S(g_{ij}(x, y, z))$ of the "history of geometry" that connects the two given 3-geometries. The double prime suffix is dropped from g_{ij}'' here and hereafter to simplify the notation. One knows from other branches of mechanics that the quantity defined in this way, $S(g_{ij})$, when it exists, even though it is a special solution, nevertheless is *always* a solution of the Hamilton-Jacobi equation. Jacobi could look for more general solutions, but Hamilton already had one!

For (43.7) to be an extremal with respect to variations of the lapse N and the shift components N_i, it was necessary (see Chapter 21) that the coefficients of these four quantities should vanish; thus,

$$g^{-1/2}\left[\frac{1}{2}(\operatorname{Tr}\boldsymbol{\pi})^2 - \operatorname{Tr}\boldsymbol{\pi}^2\right] + g^{1/2}R = 0 \tag{43.8}$$

and

$$\pi^{ij}{}_{|j} = 0. \tag{43.9}$$

In the expression for the extremal value of the action, only one term, the first, is left:

$$S(g(x, y, z)) = I_{\text{ADM, extremal}} = \int_{g'_{ij}}^{g_{ij}} \{\pi^{ij}\,\partial g_{ij}/\partial t\}\, d^4x. \tag{43.10}$$

*Actually $S \equiv S_{\text{ADM}} \equiv 16\pi S_{\text{true}} = 16\pi$ (true dynamic path length).

The effect of a slight change, δg_{ij}, in the 3-metric at the upper limit is therefore easy to read off:

$$\delta S = \int \pi^{ij}(x, y, z)\, \delta g_{ij}(x, y, z)\, d^3x. \tag{43.11}$$

The language of "functional derivative" [see, for example, Bogoliubov and Shirkov (1959)] allows one to speak in terms of a derivative rather than an integral:

Geometrodynamic momentum as rate of change of dynamic path length with respect to 3-geometry of terminal hypersurface

$$\frac{\delta S}{\delta g_{ij}} = \pi^{ij}. \tag{43.12}$$

The "field momenta" acquire a simple meaning: they give the rate of change of the action with respect to the continuous infinitude of "field coordinates," $g_{ij}(x, y, z)$. (Here the x, y, z, as well as the i and j, serve as mere labels.)

Action depends on 3-geometry, not on metric coefficients individually

Although the phase function S appears to depend on all six metric coefficients g_{ij} individually, it depends in actuality only on that combination of the g_{ij} which is locked to the 3-geometry. To verify this point, express a particular 3-geometry ${}^{(3)}\mathcal{G}$ throughout one local coordinate patch in terms of one set of coordinates x^p by one set of metric coefficients g_{pq}. Reexpress the same 3-geometry in terms of coordinates $\bar{x}^p$ shifted by the small amount ξ^p,

$$\bar{x}^p = x^p - \xi^p. \tag{43.13}$$

To keep the 3-geometry the same, that is, to keep unchanged the distance ds from one coordinate-independent point to another, the metric coefficients have to change:

$$\bar{g}_{pq} = g_{pq} + \xi_{p|q} + \xi_{q|p}. \tag{43.14}$$

Let the phase function S (or in quantum mechanics, let the probability amplitude ψ) be considered to be expressed as a functional of the metric coefficients $g_{11}(x)$, $g_{12}(x), \ldots, g_{33}(x)$. Changes $\delta g_{pq}(x)$ in these coefficients alter the H-J phase function and the probability amplitude by the amounts

$$\begin{aligned} \delta S &= \int (\delta S/\delta g_{pq})\, \delta g_{pq}\, d^3x, \\ \delta\psi &= \int (\delta\psi/\delta g_{pq})\, \delta g_{pq}\, d^3x, \end{aligned} \tag{43.15}$$

according to the standard definition of functional derivative. Therefore the coordinate change produces an ostensible change in the dynamic path length or phase S given by

$$\begin{aligned} \delta S &= \int (\delta S/\delta g_{pq})(\xi_{p|q} + \xi_{q|p})\, d^3x \\ &= -2 \int (\delta S/\delta g_{pq})_{|q}\xi_p\, d^3x. \end{aligned} \tag{43.16}$$

This change must vanish if S is to depend on the 3-geometry alone, and not on the coordinates in terms of which that 3-geometry is expressed; and must vanish, moreover, for arbitrary choice of the ξ_p. From this condition, one concludes

$$\left(\frac{\delta S}{\delta g_{pq}}\right)_{|q} = 0. \tag{43.17}$$

Likewise, one finds three equations on the wave function ψ itself, as distinguished from its phase $S/\hbar$; thus,

$$\left(\frac{\delta \psi}{\delta g_{pq}}\right)_{|q} = 0. \tag{43.18}$$

But (43.17), by virtue of (43.12), is identical with (43.9). In this sense (43.9) merely verifies what one already knew had to be true: the classical Hamilton-Jacobi function S (like the probability amplitude function ψ of quantum theory) depends on 3-geometry, not on individual metric coefficients, and not on choice of coordinates.

All the dynamic content of geometrodynamics is summarized in the sole remaining equation (43.8), which takes the form

Law of propagation of wave crests in superspace

$$g^{-1/2}\left[\frac{1}{2}g_{pq}g_{rs} - g_{pr}g_{qs}\right]\frac{\delta S}{\delta g_{pq}}\frac{\delta S}{\delta g_{rs}} + g^{1/2}R = 0. \tag{43.19}$$

This is the Einstein-Hamilton-Jacobi equation, first given explicitly in the literature by Peres (1962) on the foundation of earlier work by himself and others on the Hamiltonian formulation of geometrodynamics. This equation tells how fronts of constant S ("wave crests") propagate in superspace.

That the one EHJ equation (43.19) contains as much information as all ten components of Einstein's field equation has been demonstrated by Gerlach (1969). The central point in the analysis is the principle of constructive interference, and the main requirement for a proper treatment of this point is the concept of a completely parametrized solution of the EHJ equation.

The problem of a particle moving in two-dimensional space, as treated by the Hamilton-Jacobi method in Boxes 25.3 and 25.4, required for complete analysis a solution containing two distinct and independently adjustable parameters, the energy per unit mass, $\widetilde{E}$, and angular momentum per unit mass, $\widetilde{L}$; thus

$$\begin{aligned} S(r, \theta, t;\ \widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L}) &= -\widetilde{E}t + \widetilde{L}\theta \\ &+ \int^r [\widetilde{E}^2 - (1 - 2M/r)(1 + \widetilde{L}^2/r^2)]^{1/2}\frac{dr}{(1 - 2M/r)} + \delta(\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L}). \end{aligned} \tag{43.20}$$

Here the additive phase $\delta(\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L})$ is required if one is to be able to arrange for the particle to arrive at a given r-value at a specified t value and at a specified value of θ. One thinks of superposing four probability amplitudes, as in (43.4), with dynamic phases, S, given by (43.20) and the parameters taking on, respectively, the following four sets of values: $(\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L})$; $(\widetilde{E} + \Delta\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L})$; $(\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L} + \Delta\widetilde{L})$; and $(\widetilde{E} + \Delta\widetilde{E}, \widetilde{L} + \Delta\widetilde{L})$. The principle of constructive interference leads to the conditions

$$\begin{aligned} \partial S/\partial \widetilde{E} &= 0, \\ \partial S/\partial \widetilde{L} &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{43.21}$$

The points in the spacetime (r, θ, t) that satisfy these conditions are the YES points; they lie on the world line. The ones that don't are the NO points.

The desired solution of the EHJ equation (43.19) contains not two parameters (plus an additive phase, δ, depending on these two parameters), but an infinity of parameters, and even a continuous infinity of parameters. Thus the parameters are not to be designated as $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \ldots; \beta_1, \beta_2, \ldots$ (parameters labeled by a discrete index), but as

$$\alpha(u, v, w)$$

and

$$\beta(u, v, w)$$

(two parameters "labeled" by three continuous indices u, v, w). Accidentally omit one of this infinitude of parameters? How could one ever hope to know that what purported to be a complete solution of the EHJ equation was not in actuality complete? Happily Gerlach provides a procedure to test the parameters for completeness.

Condition of constructive interference gives classical "leaf of history" or spacetime

Granted completeness, Gerlach goes on to show that the "leaf of history in superspace" or collection of 3-geometries that satisfy the conditions of constructive interference,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\delta S({}^{(3)}\mathcal{G};\ \alpha(u, v, w),\ \beta(u, v, w))}{\delta\alpha} &= 0, \\ \frac{\delta S({}^{(3)}\mathcal{G};\ \alpha(u, v, w),\ \beta(u, v, w))}{\delta\beta} &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{43.22}$$

is identical with the leaf of history, or equivalent 4-geometry, given by the ten components of Einstein's geometrodynamic law.

From the Hamilton-Jacobi equation for a problem in elementary mechanics, it is a short step to the corresponding Schroedinger equation; similarly in geometrodynamics. No one has done more than Bryce DeWitt to explore the meaning and consequences of this "Einstein-Schroedinger equation" [DeWitt (1967a,b)]. One of the most interesting consequences is the existence of a conserved current in superspace, analogous to the conserved current

$$j_\mu = \frac{\hbar}{2im}\left(\psi^* \frac{\partial\psi}{\partial x^\mu} - \psi \frac{\partial\psi^*}{\partial x^\mu}\right)$$

that one encounters in the Klein-Gordon wave equation for a particle of spin zero.

It is an unhappy feature of this Einstein-Schroedinger wave equation that it contains second derivatives; so one has to specify both the probability amplitude, and the normal derivative of the probability amplitude, on the appropriate "superhypersurface" in superspace, in order to be able to predict the evolution of this state function elsewhere in superspace. One suggested way out of this situation—it is at least an inconvenience, possibly a real difficulty—has been proposed by Leutwyler (1968): impose a natural boundary condition that reduces the number of independent solutions from the number characteristic of a second-order equation to the number characteristic of a first-order equation. Another way out is to formulate the dynamics quite differently, in the way proposed by Kuchař (see Chapter 21), in which the resulting equation is of first order in the variable analogous to time.

The exploration of quantum geometrodynamics is simplified when one treats most of the degrees of freedom of the geometry as frozen out, by imposition of a high degree of symmetry. Then one is left with one, two, or three degrees of freedom (see Chapter 30, on mixmaster cosmology), or even infinitely many, and is led to manageable problems of quantum mechanics [Misner (1972a, 1973)].

§43.4. FLUCTUATIONS IN GEOMETRY

Of all the remarkable developments of physics since World War II, none is more impressive than the prediction and verification of the effects of the vacuum fluctuations in the electromagnetic field on the motion of the electron in the hydrogen atom (Figure 43.3). That development made it impossible to overlook the effects of such fluctuations throughout all physics and, not least, in the geometry of spacetime itself.

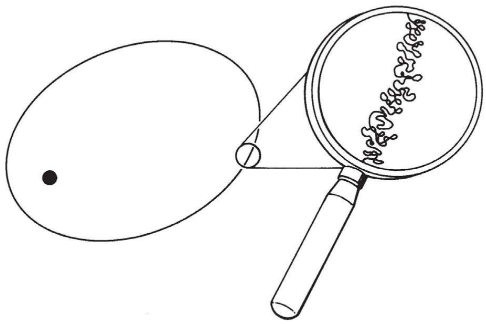


Figure 43.3.
Symbolic representation of motion of electron in hydrogen atom as affected by fluctuations in electric field in vacuum ("vacuum" or "ground state" or "zero-point" fluctuations). The electric field associated with the fluctuation, $E_x(t) = \int E_x(\omega)e^{-i\omega t}\, d\omega$, adds to the static electric field provided by the nucleus itself. The additional field brings about in the most elementary approximation the displacement $\Delta x = \int (e/m\omega^2)E_x(\omega)e^{-i\omega t}\, d\omega$. The average vanishes but the root mean square $\langle(\Delta x)^2\rangle$ does not. In consequence the electron feels an effective atomic potential altered from the expected value $V(x, y, z)$ by the amount

$$\Delta V(x, y, z) = \frac{1}{2}\langle(\Delta x)^2\rangle\, \nabla^2 V(x, y, z).$$

The average of this perturbation over the unperturbed motion accounts for the major part of the observed Lamb-Retherford shift $\Delta E = \langle \Delta V(x, y, z)\rangle$ in the energy level. Conversely, the observation of the expected shift makes the reality of the vacuum fluctuations inescapably evident.

From the zero-point fluctuations of a single oscillator to the fluctuations of the electromagnetic field to geometrodynamic fluctuations is a natural order of progression.

Fluctuations for oscillator and for electromagnetic field

A harmonic oscillator in its ground state has a probability amplitude of

$$\psi(x) = \left(\frac{m\omega}{\pi\hbar}\right)^{1/4} e^{-(m\omega/2\hbar)x^2} \tag{43.23}$$

to be displaced by the distance x from its natural classical position of equilibrium. In this sense, it may be said to "resonate" or "fluctuate" between locations in space ranging over a region of extent

$$\Delta x \sim (\hbar/m\omega)^{1/2}. \tag{43.24}$$

The electromagnetic field can be treated as an infinite collection of independent "field oscillators," with amplitudes $\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots$. When the Maxwell field is in its state of lowest energy, the probability amplitude—for the first oscillator to have amplitude ξ_1, and simultaneously the second oscillator to have amplitude ξ_2, the third ξ_3, and so on—is the product of functions of the form (43.23), one for each oscillator. When the scale of amplitudes for each oscillator is suitably normalized, the resulting infinite product takes the form

$$\psi(\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots) = N \exp\left[-({\xi_1}^2 + {\xi_2}^2 + \cdots)\right]. \tag{43.25}$$

This expression gives the probability amplitude ψ for a configuration $\boldsymbol{B}(x, y, z)$ of the magnetic field that is described by the Fourier coefficients $\xi_1, \xi_2, \ldots$. One can forgo any mention of these Fourier coefficients if one desires, however, and rewrite (43.25) directly in terms of the magnetic field configuration itself [Wheeler (1962)]:

$$\psi(\boldsymbol{B}(x, y, z)) = \mathfrak{N} \exp\left(-\int\int \frac{\boldsymbol{B}(\boldsymbol{x}_1)\cdot\boldsymbol{B}(\boldsymbol{x}_2)}{16\pi^3\hbar c r_{12}^2}\, d^3x_1\, d^3x_2\right). \tag{43.26}$$

One no longer speaks of "the" magnetic field, but instead of the probability of this, that, or the other configuration of the magnetic field, even under circumstances, as here, where the electromagnetic field is in its ground state. [See Kuchař (1970) for a similar expression for the "ground state" functional of the linearized gravitational field.]

It is reasonable enough under these circumstances that the configuration of greatest probability is $\boldsymbol{B}(x, y, z) = 0$. Consider for comparison a configuration where the magnetic field is again everywhere zero except in a region of dimension L. There let the field, subject as always to the condition div $\boldsymbol{B} = 0$, be of the order of magnitude ΔB. The probability amplitude for this configuration will be reduced relative to the nil configuration by a factor exp $(-I)$. Here the quantity I in the exponent is of the order $(\Delta B)^2 L^4/\hbar c$. Configurations for which I is large compared to 1 occur with negligible probability. Configurations for which I is small compared to 1 occur with practically the same probability as the nil configuration. In this sense, one can

2

say that the fluctuations in the magnetic field in a region of extension L are of the order of magnitude

$$\Delta B \sim \frac{(\hbar c)^{1/2}}{L^2}. \tag{43.27}$$

In other words, the field "resonates" between one configuration and another with the range of configurations of significance given by (43.27). Moreover, the smaller is the region of space under consideration, the larger are the field magnitudes that occur with appreciable probability.

Still another familiar way of speaking about electromagnetic field fluctuations gives additional insight relevant to geometrodynamics. One considers a measuring device responsive in comparable measure to the magnetic field at all points in a region of dimension L. One asks for the effect on this device of electromagnetic disturbances of various wavelengths. A disturbance of wavelength short compared to L will cause forces to act one way in some parts of the detector, and will give rise to nearly compensating forces in other parts of it. In contrast, a disturbance of a long wavelength λ produces forces everywhere in the same direction, but of a magnitude too low to have much effect. Thus the field, estimated from the equation

$$\begin{pmatrix}\text{energy of electromagnetic}\\ \text{wave of wavelength } \lambda \text{ in a}\\ \text{domain of volume } \lambda^3\end{pmatrix} \sim \begin{pmatrix}\text{energy of one quantum}\\ \text{of wavelength } \lambda\end{pmatrix}$$

or

$$B^2\lambda^3 \sim \frac{\hbar c}{\lambda}$$

or

$$B \sim \frac{(\hbar c)^{1/2}}{\lambda^2} \tag{43.28}$$

is very small if λ is large compared to the domain size L. The biggest effect is caused by a disturbance of wavelength λ comparable to L itself. This line of reasoning leads directly from (43.28) to the standard fluctuation formula (43.27).

Fluctuations in geometry dominate at the Planck scale of distances

Similar considerations apply in geometrodynamics. Quantum fluctuations in the geometry are superposed on and coexist with the large-scale, slowly varying curvature predicted by classical deterministic general relativity. Thus, in a region of dimension L, where in a local Lorentz frame the normal values of the metric coefficients will be $-1, 1, 1, 1$, there will occur fluctuations in these coefficients of the order

$$\Delta g \sim \frac{L^*}{L}, \tag{43.29}$$

fluctuations in the first derivatives of the g_{ik}'s of the order

$$\Delta \Gamma \sim \frac{\Delta g}{L} \sim \frac{L^*}{L^2}, \tag{43.30}$$

and fluctuations in the curvature of space of the order

$$\Delta R \sim \frac{\Delta g}{L^2} \sim \frac{L^*}{L^3}. \tag{43.31}$$

Here

$$L^* = \left(\frac{\hbar G}{c^3}\right)^{1/2} = 1.6 \times 10^{-33}\ \text{cm} \tag{43.32}$$

is the so-called Planck length [Planck (1899)].

It is appropriate to look at orders of magnitude. The curvature of space within and near the earth, according to classical Einstein theory, is of the order

$$\begin{aligned} R &\sim \left(\frac{G}{c^2}\right)\rho \sim (0.7 \times 10^{-28}\ \text{cm/g})(5\ \text{g/cm}^3) \\ &\sim 4 \times 10^{-28}\ \text{cm}^{-2}. \end{aligned} \tag{43.33}$$

This quantity has a very direct physical significance. It measures the "tide-producing component of the gravitational field" as sensed, for example, in a freely falling elevator or in a spaceship in free orbit around the earth. By comparison, the quantum fluctuations in the curvature of space are only

$$\Delta R \sim 10^{-33}\ \text{cm}^{-2}, \tag{43.34}$$

even in a domain of observation as small as 1 cm in extent. Thus the quantum fluctuations in the geometry of space are completely negligible under everyday circumstances.

Even in atomic and nuclear physics the fluctuations in the metric,

$$\Delta g \sim \frac{10^{-33}\ \text{cm}}{10^{-8}\ \text{cm}} \sim 10^{-25}$$

and

$$\Delta g \sim \frac{10^{-33}\ \text{cm}}{10^{-13}\ \text{cm}} \sim 10^{-20}, \tag{43.35}$$

are so small that it is completely in order to idealize the physics as taking place in a flat Lorentzian spacetime manifold.

The quantum fluctuations in the geometry are nevertheless inescapable, if one is to believe the quantum principle and Einstein's theory. They coexist with the geometrodynamic development predicted by classical general relativity. The fluctuations widen the narrow swathe cut through superspace by the classical history of the geometry. In other words, the geometry is not deterministic, even though it looks so at the everyday scale of observation. Instead, at a submicroscopic scale it "resonates" between one configuration and another and another. This terminology means no more and no less than the following: (1) Each configuration $^{(3)}\mathfrak{G}$ has its own probability amplitude $\psi = \psi(^{(3)}\mathfrak{G})$. (2) These probability amplitudes have comparable magnitudes for a whole range of 3-geometries included within the limits (43.29) on either side of the classical swathe through superspace. (3) This range of 3-geometries is far too variegated on the submicroscopic sale to fit into any one 4-geometry, or any one classical geometrodynamic history. (4) Only when one overlooks these small-scale fluctuations ($\sim 10^{-33}$ cm) and examines the larger-scale features of the 3-geometries do they appear to fit into a single space-time manifold, such as comports with the classical field equations.

These small-scale fluctuations tell one that something like gravitational collapse is taking place everywhere in space and all the time; that gravitational collapse is in effect perpetually being done and undone; that in addition to the gravitational collapse of the universe, and of a star, one has also to deal with a third and, because it is constantly being undone, most significant level of gravitational collapse at the Planck scale of distances.

EXERCISES

Exercise 43.1. THE ACTION PRINCIPLE FOR A FREE PARTICLE IN NONRELATIVISTIC MECHANICS

Taking as action principle $I = \int L\, dt =$ extremum, with specified x', t' and x'', t'' at the two limits, and with $L = \frac{1}{2}m(dx/dt)^2$, find (1) the extremizing history $x = x(t)$ and (2) the dynamical path length or action $S(x'', t''; x', t') = I_{\text{extremum}}$ in its dependence on the end points. Also (3) write down the Hamilton-Jacobi equation for this problem, and (4) verify that $S(x, t; x', t')$ satisfies this equation. Finally, imagining the Hamilton-Jacobi equation not to be known, (5) derive it from the already known properties of the function S itself.

Exercise 43.2. THE ACTION FOR THE HARMONIC OSCILLATOR

The kinetic energy is $\frac{1}{2}m(dx/dt)^2$ and the potential energy is $\frac{1}{2}m\omega^2x^2$. Carry through the analysis of parts (1), (2), (3), (4) of the preceding exercise. Partial answer:

$$S = \frac{m\omega}{2}\,\frac{(x^2 + x'^2)\cos\omega(t - t') - 2xx'}{\sin\omega(t - t')}.$$

Verify that $\partial S/\partial x$ gives momentum and $-\partial S/\partial t$ gives energy.

Exercise 43.3. QUANTUM PROPAGATOR FOR HARMONIC OSCILLATOR

Show that the probability amplitude for a simple harmonic oscillator to transit from x', t' to x'', t'' is

$$\langle x'', t''; x', t'\rangle = \left(\frac{m\omega}{2\pi i\hbar\,\sin\omega(t'' - t')}\right)^{1/2} \times \exp\frac{im\omega[(x''^2 + x'^2)\cos\omega(t'' - t') - 2x''x']}{2\hbar\,\sin\omega(t'' - t')},$$

and that it reduces for the case of a free particle to

$$\langle x'', t''; x', t'\rangle = \left(\frac{m}{2\pi i\hbar(t'' - t')}\right)^{1/2} \exp\frac{im(x'' - x')^2}{2\hbar(t'' - t')}.$$

Note that one can derive all the harmonic-oscillator wave functions from the solution by use of the formula

$$\langle x'', t''; x', t'\rangle = \sum_n u_n(x'')u_n^*(x')\exp iE_n(t' - t'')/\hbar.$$

Exercise 43.4. QUANTUM PROPAGATOR FOR FREE ELECTROMAGNETIC FIELD

In flat spacetime, one is given on the spacelike hypersurface $t = t'$ the divergence-free magnetic field $B'(x, y, z)$ and on the spacelike hypersurface $t = t''$ the divergence-free magnetic field $B''(x, y, z)$. By Fourier analysis (reducing this problem to the preceding problem) or otherwise, find the probability amplitude to transit from B' at t' to B'' at t''.

Exercise 43.5. HAMILTON-JACOBI FORMULATION OF MAXWELL ELECTRODYNAMICS

Regard the four components A_μ of the electromagnetic 4-potential as the primary quantities; split them into a space part A_i and a scalar potential ϕ. (1) Derive from the action principle (in flat spacetime)

$$I = (1/8\pi) \int (E^2 - B^2)\, d^4x,$$

by splitting off an appropriate divergence, an expression qualitatively similar in character to (43.7). (2) Show that the appropriate quantity to be fixed on the initial and final spacelike hypersurface is not really A_i itself, but the magnetic field, defined by $\boldsymbol{B} = \operatorname{curl} \boldsymbol{A}$. (3) Derive the Hamilton-Jacobi equation for the dynamic phase or action $S(\boldsymbol{B}, \mathcal{S})$ in its dependence on the choice of hypersurface $\mathcal{S}$, and the choice of magnetic field $\boldsymbol{B}$ on this hypersurface,

$$-\frac{\delta S}{\delta \Omega} = \frac{1}{8\pi} \boldsymbol{B}^2 + \frac{(4\pi)^2}{8\pi} \left(\frac{\delta S}{\delta \boldsymbol{A}}\right)^2.$$

The quantity on the left is Tomonaga's "bubble time" derivative [Tomonaga (1946); see also Box 21.1].

CHAPTER 44

BEYOND THE END OF TIME

"Heaven wheels above you
Displaying to you her eternal glories
And still your eyes are on the ground"

DANTE

The world "stands before us as a great, eternal riddle"

EINSTEIN (1949a)

§44.1. GRAVITATIONAL COLLAPSE AS THE GREATEST CRISIS IN PHYSICS OF ALL TIME

This chapter is entirely Track 2. No previous Track-2 material is needed as preparation for it, but Chapter 43 will be helpful.

The universe starts with a big bang, expands to a maximum dimension, then recontracts and collapses: no more awe-inspiring prediction was ever made. It is preposterous. Einstein himself could not believe his own prediction. It took Hubble's observations to force him and the scientific community to abandon the concept of a universe that endures from everlasting to everlasting.

Later work of Tolman (1934a), Avez (1960), Geroch (1967), and Hawking and Penrose (1969) generalizes the conclusion. A model universe that is closed, that obeys Einstein's geometrodynamic law, and that contains a nowhere negative density of mass-energy, inevitably develops a singularity. No one sees any escape from the density of mass-energy rising without limit. A computing machine calculating ahead step by step the dynamical evolution of the geometry comes to the point where it can not go on. Smoke, figuratively speaking, starts to pour out of the computer. Yet physics surely continues to go on if for no other reason than this: Physics is by definition that which does go on its eternal way despite all the shadowy changes in the surface appearance of reality.

The Marchon lecture given by J. A. W. at the University of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, May 18, 1971, and the Nuffield lecture given at Cambridge University July 19, 1971, were based on the material presented in this chapter.

Some day a door will surely open and expose the glittering central mechanism of the world in its beauty and simplicity. Toward the arrival of that day, no development holds out more hope than the paradox of gravitational collapse. Why paradox? Because Einstein's equation says "this is the end" and physics says "there is no end." Why hope? Because among all paradigms for probing a puzzle, physics proffers none with more promise than a paradox.

The paradox of collapse: physics stops, but physics must go on

No previous period of physics brought a greater paradox than 1911 (Box 44.1). Rutherford had just been forced to conclude that matter is made up of localized positive and negative charges. Matter as so constituted should undergo electric collapse in $\sim 10^{-17}$ sec, according to theory. Observation equally clearly proclaimed that matter is stable. No one took the paradox more seriously than Bohr. No one worked around and around the central mystery with more energy wherever work was possible. No one brought to bear a more judicious combination of daring and conservativeness, nor a deeper feel for the harmony of physics. The direct opposite

The 1911 crisis of electric collapse

Box 44.1 COLLAPSE OF UNIVERSE PREDICTED BY CLASSICAL THEORY, COMPARED AND CONTRASTED WITH CLASSICALLY PREDICTED COLLAPSE OF ATOM

System	*Atom (1911)*	*Universe (1970's)*
Dynamic entity	System of electrons	Geometry of space
Nature of classically predicted collapse	Electron headed toward point-center of attraction is driven in a finite time to infinite energy	Not only matter but space itself arrives in a finite proper time at a condition of infinite compaction
One rejected "way out"	Give up Coulomb law of force	Give up Einstein's field equation
Another proposal for a "cheap way out" that has to be rejected	"Accelerated charge need not radiate"	"Matter cannot be compressed beyond a certain density by any pressure, however high
How this proposal violates principle of causality	Coulomb field of point-charge cannot readjust itself with infinite speed out to indefinitely great distances to sudden changes in velocity of charge	Speed of sound cannot exceed speed of light; pressure cannot exceed density of mass-energy
A major new consideration introduced by recognizing quantum principle as overarching organizing principle of physics	Uncertainty principle; binding too close to center of attraction makes zero-point kinetic energy outbalance potential energy; consequent existence of a lowest quantum state; can't radiate because no lower state available to drop to	Uncertainty principle; propagation of representative wave packet in superspace does not lead deterministically to a singular configuration for the geometry of space; expect rather a probability distribution of outcomes, each outcome describing a universe with a different size, a different set of particle masses, a different number of particles, and a different length of time required for its expansion and recontraction.

of harmony, cacophony, is the impression that comes from sampling the literature of the 'teens on the structure of the atom. (1) Change the Coulomb law of force between electric charges? (2) Give up the principle that an accelerated charge must radiate? There was little inhibition against this and still wilder abandonings of the well-established. In contrast, Bohr held fast to these two principles. At the same time he insisted on the importance of a third principle, firmly established by Planck in quite another domain of physics, the quantum principle. With that key he opened the door to the world of the atom.

Great as was the crisis of 1911, today gravitational collapse confronts physics with its greatest crisis ever. At issue is the fate, not of matter alone, but of the universe itself. The dynamics of collapse, or rather of its reverse, expansion, is evidenced not by theory alone, but also by observation; and not by one observation, but by observations many in number and carried out by astronomers of unsurpassed ability and integrity. Collapse, moreover, is not unique to the large-scale dynamics of the universe. A white dwarf star or a neutron star of more than critical mass is predicted to undergo gravitational collapse to a black hole (Chapters 32 and 33). Sufficiently many stars falling sufficiently close together at the center of the nucleus of a galaxy are expected to collapse to a black hole many powers of ten more massive than the sun. An active search is under way for evidence for a black hole in this Galaxy (Box 33.3). The process that makes a black hole is predicted to provide an experimental model for the gravitational collapse of the universe itself, with one difference. For collapse to a black hole, the observer has his choice whether (1) to observe from a safe distance, in which case his observations will reveal nothing of what goes on inside the horizon; or (2) to follow the falling matter on in, in which case he sees the final stages of the collapse, not only of the matter itself, but of the geometry surrounding the matter, to indefinitely high compaction, but only at the cost of his own early demise. For the gravitational collapse of a closed model universe, no such choice is available to the observer. His fate is sealed. So too is the fate of matter and elementary particles, driven up to indefinitely high densities. The stakes in the crisis of collapse are hard to match: the dynamics of the largest object, space, and the smallest object, an elementary particle—and how both began.

§44.2. ASSESSMENT OF THE THEORY THAT PREDICTS COLLAPSE

No one reflecting on the paradox of collapse ("collapse ends physics"; "collapse cannot end physics") can fail to ask, "What are the limits of validity of Einstein's geometric theory of gravity?" A similar question posed itself in the crisis of 1911. The Coulomb law for the force acting between two charges had been tested at distances of meters and millimeters, but what warrant was there to believe that it holds down to the 10^{-8} cm of atomic dimensions? Of course, in the end it proves to hold not only at the level of the atom, and at the 10^{-13} cm level of the nucleus, but even down to 5×10^{-15} cm [Barber, Gittelman, O'Neill, and Richter, and Bailey *et al.* (1968), as reviewed by Farley (1969) and Brodsky and Drell (1970)], a striking example of what Wigner (1960) calls the "unreasonable effectiveness of mathematics in the natural sciences."

No theory more resembles Maxwell's electrodynamics in its simplicity, beauty, and scope than Einstein's geometrodynamics. Few principles in physics are more firmly established than those on which it rests: the local validity of special relativity (Chapters 2–7), the equivalence principle (Chapter 16), the conservation of momentum and energy (Chapters 5, 15 and 16), and the prevalence of second-order field equations throughout physics (Chapter 17). Those principles and the demand for no "extraneous fields" (e.g., Dicke's scalar field) and "no prior geometry" (§17.6) lead to the conclusion that the geometry of spacetime must be Riemannian and the geometrodynamic law must be Einstein's.

Battle-tested theory of gravitation

To say that the geometry is Riemannian is to say that the interval between any two nearby events C and D, anywhere in spacetime, stated in terms of the interval AB between two nearby fiducial events, at quite another point in spacetime, has a value CD/AB independent of the route of intercomparison (Chapter 13 and Box 16.4). There are a thousand routes. By this hydraheaded prediction, Einstein's theory thus exposes itself to destruction in a thousand ways (Box 16.4).

Geometrodynamics lends itself to being disproven in other ways as well. The geometry has no option about the control it exerts on the dynamics of particles and fields (Chapter 20). The theory makes predictions about the equilibrium configurations and pulsations of compact stars (Chapters 23–26). It gives formulas (Chapters 27–29) for the deceleration of the expansion of the universe, for the density of mass-energy, and for the magnifying power of the curvature of space, the tests of which are not far off. It predicts gravitational collapse, and the existence of black holes, and a wealth of physics associated with these objects (Chapters 31–34). It predicts gravitational waves (Chapters 35–37). In the appropriate approximation, it encompasses all the well-tested predictions of the Newtonian theory of gravity for the dynamics of the solar system, and predicts testable post-Newtonian corrections besides, including several already verified effects (Chapters 38–40).

No inconsistency of principle has ever been found in Einstein's geometric theory of gravity. No purported observational evidence against the theory has ever stood the test of time. No other acceptable account of physics of comparable simplicity and scope has ever been put forward.

Continue this assessment of general relativity a little further before returning to the central issue, the limits of validity of the theory and their bearing on the issue of gravitational collapse. What has Einstein's geometrodynamics contributed to the understanding of physics?

New view of nature flowing from Einstein's geometrodynamics

First, it has dethroned spacetime from a post of preordained perfection high above the battles of matter and energy, and marked it as a new dynamic entity participating actively in this combat.

Second, by tying energy and momentum to the curvature of spacetime, Einstein's theory has recognized the law of conservation of momentum and energy as an automatic consequence of the geometric identity that the boundary of a boundary is zero (Chapters 15 and 17).

Third, it has recognized gravitation as a manifestation of the curvature of the geometry of spacetime rather than as something foreign and "physical" imbedded in spacetime.

Fourth, general relativity has reinforced the view that "physics is local"; that the analysis of physics becomes simple when it connects quantities at a given event with quantities at immediately adjacent events.

Fifth, obedient to the quantum principle, it recognizes that spacetime and time itself are ideas valid only at the classical level of approximation; that the proper arena for the Einstein dynamics of geometry is not spacetime, but superspace; and that this dynamics is described in accordance with the quantum principle by the propagation of a probability amplitude through superspace (Chapter 43). In consequence, the geometry of space is subject to quantum fluctuations in metric coefficients of the order

$$\delta g \sim \frac{(\text{Planck length, } L^* = (\hbar G/c^3)^{1/2} = 1.6 \times 10^{-33}\text{ cm})}{(\text{linear extension of region under study})}.$$

Electric charge as lines of force trapped in the topology of space

Sixth, standard Einstein geometrodynamics is partial as little to Euclidean topology as to Euclidean geometry. A multiply connected topology provides a natural description for electric charge as electric lines of force trapped in the topology of a multiply connected space (Figure 44.1). Any other description of electricity postulates a breakdown in Maxwell's field equations for the vacuum at a site where charge

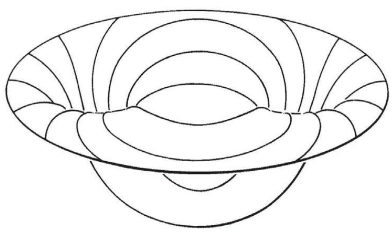


Figure 44.1.
Electric charge viewed as electric lines of force trapped in the topology of a multiply connected space [for the history of this concept see reference 36 of Wheeler (1968a)]. The wormhole or handle is envisaged as connecting two very different regions in the same space. One of the wormhole mouths, viewed by an observer with poor resolving power, appears to be the seat of an electric charge. Out of this region of 3-space he finds lines of force emerging over the whole 4π solid angle. He may construct a boundary around this charge, determine the flux through this boundary, incorrectly apply the theorem of Gauss and "prove" that there is a charge "inside the boundary." It isn't a boundary. Someone caught within it—to speak figuratively—can go into that mouth of the wormhole, through the throat, out the other mouth, and return by way of the surrounding space to look at his "prison" from the outside. Lines of force nowhere end. Maxwell's equations nowhere fail. Nowhere can one place a finger and say, "Here there is some charge." This classical type of electric charge has no direct relation whatsoever to quantized electric charge. There is a freedom of choice about the flux through the wormhole, and a specificity about the connection between one charge and another, which is quite foreign to the charges of elementary particle physics. For ease of visualization the number of space dimensions in the above diagram has been reduced from three to two. The third dimension, measured off the surface, has no physical meaning—it only provides an extra dimension in which to imbed the surface for more convenient diagrammatic representation. [For more detail see Misner and Wheeler (1957), reprinted in Wheeler (1962)].

is located, or postulates the existence of some foreign and "physical" electric jelly imbedded in space, or both. No one has ever found a way to describe electricity free of these unhappy features except to say that the quantum fluctuations in the geometry of space are so great at small distances that even the topology fluctuates, makes "wormholes," and traps lines of force. These fluctuations have to be viewed, not as tied to particles, and endowed with the scale of distances associated with particle physics ($\sim 10^{-13}$ cm) but as pervading all space ("foam-like structure of geometry") and characterized by the Planck distance ($\sim 10^{-33}$ cm). Thus a third type of gravitational collapse forces itself on one's attention, a collapse continually being done and being undone everywhere in space: surely a guide to the outcome of collapse at the level of a star and at the level of the universe (Box 44.2).

Box 44.2 THREE LEVELS OF GRAVITATIONAL COLLAPSE

1. Universe
2. Black hole
3. Fluctuations at the Planck scale of distances

Recontraction and collapse of the universe is a kind of mirror image of the "big bang," on which one already has so much evidence.

Collapse of matter to form a black hole is most natural at two distinct levels: (a) collapse of the dense white-dwarf core of an individual star (when that core exceeds the critical mass, $\sim 1 M_\odot$ or $2 M_\odot$, at which a neutron star is no longer a possible stable end-point for collapse) and (b) coalescence one by one of the stars in a galactic nucleus to make a black hole of mass up to $10^6 M_\odot$ or even $10^9 M_\odot$.

In either case, no feature of principle about matter falling into the black hole is more interesting than the option that the observer has (symbolized by the branching arrow in the inset). He can go along with the infalling matter, in which case he sees the final stages of collapse, but only at the cost of his own demise. Or he can stay safely outside, in which case even after indefinitely long time he sees only the first part of the collapse, with the infalling matter creeping up more and more slowly to the horizon.

In the final stages of the collapse of a closed model universe, all black holes present are caught up and driven together, amalgamating one by one. No one has any way to look at the event from safely outside; one is inevitably caught up in it oneself.

Collapse at the Planck scale of distances is taking place everywhere and all the time in quantum fluctuations in the geometry and, one believes, the topology of space. In this sense, collapse is continually being done and undone, modeling the undoing of the collapse of the universe itself, summarized in the term, "the reprocessing of the universe" (see text).

§44.3. VACUUM FLUCTUATIONS: THEIR PREVALENCE AND FINAL DOMINANCE

If Einstein's theory thus throws light on the rest of physics, the rest of physics also throws light on geometrodynamics. No point is more central than this, that empty space is not empty. It is the seat of the most violent physics. The electromagnetic field fluctuates (Chapter 43). Virtual pairs of positive and negative electrons, in effect, are continually being created and annihilated, and likewise pairs of mu mesons, pairs of baryons, and pairs of other particles. All these fluctuations coexist with the quantum fluctuations in the geometry and topology of space. Are they additional to those geometrodynamic zero-point disturbances, or are they, in some sense not now well-understood, mere manifestations of them?

Is matter built out of geometry?

Put the question in other words. Recall Clifford, inspired by Riemann, speaking to the Cambridge Philosophical Society on February 21, 1870, "On the Space Theory of Matter" [Clifford (1879), pp. 244 and 322; and (1882), p. 21], and saying, "I hold in fact (1) That small portions of space *are* in fact of a nature analogous to little hills on a surface which is on the average flat; namely, that the ordinary laws of geometry are not valid in them. (2) That this property of being curved or distorted is continually being passed on from one portion of space to another after the manner of a wave. (3) That this variation of the curvature of space is what really happens in that phenomenon which we call the *motion of matter,* whether ponderable or etherial. (4) That in the physical world nothing else takes place but this variation, subject (possibly) to the law of continuity." Ask if there is a sense in which one can speak of a particle as constructed out of geometry. Or rephrase the question in updated language: "Is a particle a geometrodynamic exciton?" What else is there out of which to build a particle except geometry itself? And what else is there to give discreteness to such an object except the quantum principle?

The Clifford-Einstein space theory of matter has not been forgotten in recent years. "In conclusion," one of the authors wrote a decade ago [Wheeler (1962)], "the vision of Riemann, Clifford, and Einstein, of a purely geometric basis for physics, today has come to a higher state of development, and offers richer prospects—and presents deeper problems—than ever before. The quantum of action adds to this geometrodynamics new features, of which the most striking is the presence of fluctuations of the wormhole type throughout all space. If there is any correspondence at all between this virtual foam-like structure and the physical vacuum as it has come to be known through quantum electrodynamics, then there seems to be no escape from identifying these wormholes with 'undressed electrons.' Completely different from these 'undressed electrons,' according to all available evidence, are the electrons and other particles of experimental physics. For these particles the geometrodynamic picture suggests the model of collective disturbances in a virtual foam-like vacuum, analogous to different kinds of phonons or excitons in a solid.

The richness of the physics of the vacuum

"The enormous factor from nuclear densities $\sim 10^{14}$ g/cm^3 to the density of field fluctuation energy in the vacuum, $\sim 10^{94}$ g/cm^3, argues that elementary particles represent a percentage-wise almost completely negligible change in the locally violent conditions that characterize the vacuum. ['A particle (10^{14} g/cm^3) means as little to the physics of the vacuum (10^{94} g/cm^3) as a cloud (10^{-6} g/cm^3) means to the physics of the sky (10^{-3} g/cm^3).'] In other words, elementary particles do not form a really basic starting point for the description of nature. Instead, they represent a first-order correction to vacuum physics. That vacuum, that zero-order state of affairs, with its enormous densities of virtual photons and virtual positive-negative pairs and virtual wormholes, has to be described properly before one has a fundamental starting point for a proper perturbation-theoretic analysis."

"These conclusions about the energy density of the vacuum, its complicated topological character, and the richness of the physics which goes on in the vacuum, stand in no evident contradiction with what quantum electrodynamics has to say about the vacuum. Instead the conclusions from the 'small distance' analysis (10^{-33} cm)—sketchy as it is—and from 'larger distance' analysis (10^{-11} cm) would seem to [be able] to reinforce each other in a most natural way.

"The most evident shortcoming of the geometrodynamic model as it stands is this, that *it fails to supply any completely natural place* for spin $\frac{1}{2}$ in general and *for the neutrino* in particular."

Attempts to find a natural place for spin $\frac{1}{2}$ in Einstein's standard geometrodynamics (Box 44.3) founder because there is no natural way for a *change* in connectivity to take place within the context of classical differential geometry.

A uranium nucleus undergoing fission starts with one topology and nevertheless ends up with another topology. It makes this transition in a perfectly continuous way, classical differential geometry notwithstanding.

No place in geometrodynamics for change of topology; therefore turn to "pregeometry"

There are reputed to be two kinds of lawyers. One tells the client what not to do. The other listens to what the client has to do and tells him how to do it. From the first lawyer, classical differential geometry, the client goes away disappointed, still searching for a natural way to describe quantum fluctuations in the connectivity of space. Only in this way can he hope to describe electric charge as lines of electric force trapped in the topology of space. Only in this way does he expect to be able to understand and analyze the final stages of gravitational collapse. Pondering his problems, he comes to the office of a second lawyer, with the name "Pregeometry" on the door. Full of hope, he knocks and enters. What is pregeometry to be and say? Born of a combination of hope and need, of philosophy and physics and mathematics and logic, pregeometry will tell a story unfinished at this writing, but full of incidents of evolution so far as it goes.

§44.4. NOT GEOMETRY, BUT PREGEOMETRY, AS THE MAGIC BUILDING MATERIAL

An early survey (Box 44.4) asked whether geometry can be constructed with the help of the quantum principle out of more basic elements, that do not themselves have any specific dimensionality.

The focus of attention in this 1964 discussion was "dimensionality without dimensionality." However, the prime pressures to ponder pregeometry were and remain

(continued on page 1206)

Box 44.3 THE DIFFICULTIES WITH ATTEMPTS TO FIND A NATURAL PLACE FOR SPIN $\frac{1}{2}$ IN EINSTEIN'S STANDARD GEOMETRODYNAMICS

"It is impossible" [Wheeler (1962)] "to accept any description of elementary particles that does not have a place for spin $\frac{1}{2}$. What, then, has any purely geometric description to offer in explanation of spin $\frac{1}{2}$ in general? More particularly and more importantly, what place is there in quantum geometrodynamics for the neutrino—the only entity of half-integral spin that is a pure field in its own right, in the sense that it has zero rest mass and moves with the speed of light? No clear or satisfactory answer is known to this question today. Unless and until an answer is forthcoming, *pure geometrodynamics must be judged deficient as a basis for elementary particle physics*."

A later publication [Wheeler (1968a)] takes up this issue again, noting that, "A new world opens out for analysis in quantum geometrodynamics. The central new concept is space resonating between one foamlike structure and another. For this multiple-connectedness of space at submicroscopic distances no single feature of nature speaks more powerfully than electric charge. Yet at least as impressive as charge is the prevalence of spin $\frac{1}{2}$ throughout the world of elementary particles."

Repeating the statement that "It is impossible to accept any description of elementary particles that does not have a place for spin $\frac{1}{2}$," the article adds to the discussion a new note: "Happily, the concept of spin manifold has come to light, not least through the work of John Milnor [see Lichnerowicz (1961a,b,c) and (1964); Milnor (1962), (1963), and (1965a,b); Hsiang and Anderson (1965); Anderson, Brown, and Peterson (1966a,b); and Penrose (1968a)]. This concept suggests a new and *interesting interpretation of a spinor field* within the context of the resonating microtopology of quantum geometrodynamics, *as the nonclassical two-valuedness* [Pauli's standard term for spin; see, for example, Pauli (1947)] *that attaches to the probability amplitude for otherwise identical 3-geometries endowed with alternative 'spin structures.'*" More specifically: "One does not classify the closed orientable 3-manifold of physics completely when one gives its topology, its differential structures, and its metric. One must tell which spin structure it has." [On a 3-geometry with the topology of a 3-sphere, one can lay down a continuous field of triads (a triad consisting of three orthonormal vectors). Any other continuous field of triads can be deformed into the first field by a continuous sequence of small readjustments. One says that the 3-sphere admits only one "spin structure," a potentially misleading standard word for what could just as well have been called a "triad structure." In contrast, a 3-sphere with n handles or wormholes admits 2^n "spin structures" (continuous fields of triads) inequivalent to one another under any continuous sequence of small readjustments whatsoever, and distinguished from one another in any convenient way by n "descriptors" $w_1, w_2, \ldots,$ $w_k, \ldots w_n$.] It is natural in quantum geometrodynamics to expect "separate probability amplitudes for a 3-geometry with descriptor $w_k = +1$ and for an otherwise identical 3-geometry with descriptor $w_k = -1$. Does this circumstance imply that quantum geometrodynamics supplies all the machinery one needs to describe fields of spin $\frac{1}{2}$ in general and the neutrino field in particular? . . . That is the only way that has ever turned up within the framework of Einstein's general relativity and Planck's quantum principle. Is this the right path? It is difficult to name any question more decisive than this in one's assessment of 'everything as geometry.'"

Why not spell out these concepts, reduce them to practice, and compare them with what one knows about the behavior of fields of spin $\frac{1}{2}$? There is a central difficulty in this enterprise. It assumes and demands on physical grounds that the topology of the 3-geometry shall be free to change from one connectivity to another. In contrast, classical differential geometry says, in effect, "Once one topology, always that topology." Try a question like this, "When a new handle develops and the number of descriptors rises by one, what boundary condition in superspace connects the probability amplitude ψ for 3-geometries of the original topology with the probability amplitudes ψ_+ and ψ_- for the two spin structures of the new topology?" Classical differential geometry not only gives one no help in answering this question; it even forbids one to ask it. In other words, one cannot even get the enterprise "on the road" for want of a natural mathematical way to describe the required change in topology. The idea is therefore abandoned here and now that 3-geometry is "the magic building material of the universe." In contrast, pregeometry (see text), far from being endowed with any frozen topology, is to be viewed as not even possessing any dimensionality.

Box 44.4 "A BUCKET OF DUST"—AN EARLY ATTEMPT TO FORMULATE THE CONCEPT OF PREGEOMETRY [Wheeler (1964a)]

"What line of thought could ever be imagined as *leading* to four dimensions—or any dimensionality at all—out of more primitive considerations? In the case of atoms one derives the yellow color of the sodium D-lines by analyzing the quantum dynamics of a system, no part of which is ever endowed with anything remotely resembling the attribute of color. Likewise any derivation of the four-dimensionality of spacetime can hardly *start* with the idea of dimensionality."

"Recall the notion of a Borel set. Loosely speaking, a Borel set is a collection of points ("bucket of dust") which have not yet been assembled into a manifold of any particular dimensionality. . . . Recalling the universal sway of the quantum principle, one can imagine probability amplitudes for the points in a Borel set to be assembled into points with this, that, and the other dimensionality. . . . More conditions have to be imposed on a given number of points—as to which has which for a nearest neighbor—when the points are put together in a five-dimensional array than when these same points are arranged in a two-dimensional pattern. Thus one can think of each dimensionality as having a much higher statistical weight than the next *higher* dimensionality. On the other hand, for manifolds with one, two, and three dimensions, the geometry is too rudimentary—one can suppose—to give anything interesting. Thus Einstein's field equations, applied to a manifold of dimensionality so low, demand flat space; only when the dimensionality is as high as four do really interesting possibilities arise. Can four, therefore, be considered to be the unique dimensionality which is at the same time high enough to give any real physics and yet low enough to have great statistical weight?

"It is too much to imagine that one has yet made enough mistakes in this domain of thought to explore such ideas with any degree of good judgment."

Consider a handle on the geometry. Let it thin halfway along its length to a point. In other words, let the handle dissolve into two bent prongs that touch at a point. Let these prongs separate and shorten. In this process two points part company that were once immediate neighbors. "However sudden the change is in classical theory, in quantum theory there is a probability amplitude function which falls off in the classically forbidden domain. In other words, there is some residual connection between points which are ostensibly very far away (travel from one 'tip' down one prong, then through the larger space to which these prongs are attached, and then up the other prong to the other tip). But there is nothing distinctive in principle about the two points that have happened to come into discussion. Thus it would seem that there must be a connection . . . between *every* point and every other point. Under these conditions the concept of nearest neighbor would appear no longer to make sense. Thus the tool disappears with the help of which one might otherwise try to speak [un]ambiguously about dimensionality."

two features of nature, spin $\frac{1}{2}$ and charge, that speak out powerfully from every part of elementary particle physics.

A fresh perspective on pregeometry comes from a fresh assessment of general relativity. "Geometrodynamics is neither as important or as simple as it looks. Do not make it the point of departure in searching for underlying simplicity. Look deeper, at elementary particle physics." This is the tenor of interesting new considerations put forward by Sakharov [*the* Sakharov] (1967) and summarized under the heading, "Gravitation as the metric elasticity of space," in Box 17.2. In brief, as elasticity is to atomic physics, so—in Sakharov's view—gravitation is to elementary particle physics. The energy of an elastic deformation is nothing but energy put into the bonds between atom and atom by the deformation. The energy that it takes to curve space is nothing but perturbation in the vacuum energy of fields plus particles brought about by that curvature, according to Sakharov. The energy required for the deformation is governed in the one case by two elastic constants and in the other case by one elastic constant (the Newtonian constant of gravity) but in both cases, he reasons, the constants arise by combination of a multitude of complicated individual effects, not by a brave clean stroke on an empty slate.

Sakharov: gravitation is the "metric elasticity of space"

One gives all the more favorable reception to Sakhorov's view of gravity because one knows today, as one did not in 1915, how opulent in physics the vacuum is. In Einstein's day one had come in a single decade from the ideal God-given Lorentz perfection of flat spacetime to curved spacetime. It took courage to assign even one physical constant to that world of geometry that had always stood so far above physics. The vacuum looked for long as innocent of structure as a sheet of glass emerging from a rolling mill. With the discovery of the positive electron [Anderson (1933)], one came to recognize a little of the life that heat can unfreeze in "empty" space. Each new particle and radiation that was discovered brought a new accretion to the recognized richness of the vacuum. Macadam looks smooth, but a bulldozer has only to cut a single furrow through the roadway to disclose all the complications beneath the surface.

The stratification of space

Think of a particle as built out of the geometry of space; think of a particle as a "geometrodynamic exciton"? No model—it would seem to follow from Sakharov's assessment—could be less in harmony with nature, except to think of an atom as built out of elasticity! Elasticity did not explain atoms. Atoms explained elasticity. If, likewise, particles fix the constant in Einstein's geometrodynamic law (Sakharov), must it not be unreasonable to think of the geometrodynamic law as explaining particles?

Comparison with everyday elasticity

Carry the comparison between geometry and elasticity one stage deeper (Fig. 44.2). In a mixed solid there are hundreds of distinct bonds, all of which contribute to the elastic constants; some of them arise from Van der Waal's forces, some from ionic coupling, some from homopolar linkage; they have the greatest variety of strengths; but all have their origin in something so fantastically simple as a system of positively and negatively charged masses moving in accordance with the laws of quantum mechanics. In no way was it required or right to meet each complication of the chemistry and physics of a myriad of bonds with a corresponding complication of principle. By going to a level of analysis deeper than bond strengths, one had

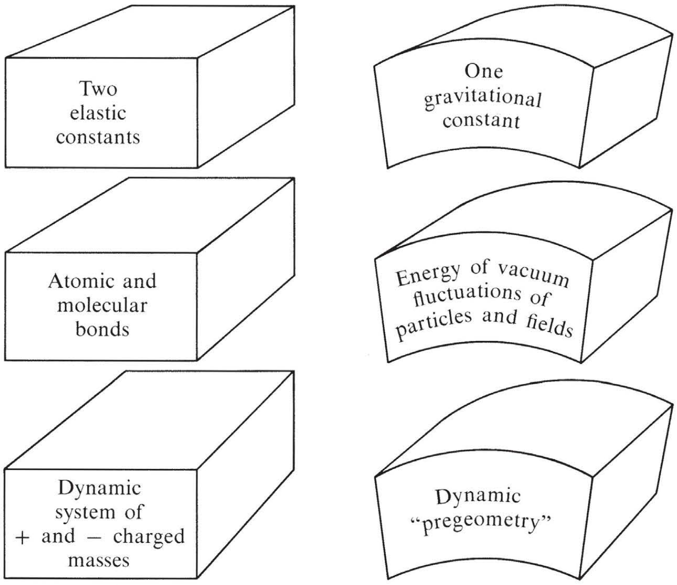


Figure 44.2.
Elasticity and geometrodynamics, as viewed at three levels of analysis. A hundred years of the study of elasticity did not reveal the existence of molecules, and a hundred years of the study of molecular chemistry did not reveal Schrödinger's equation. Revelation moved upward in the diagram, not downward.

emerged into a world of light, where nothing but simplicity and unity was to be seen.

Compare with geometry. The vacuum is animated with the zero-point activity of distinct fields and scores of distinct particles, all of which, according to Sakharov, contribute to the Newtonian G, the "elastic constant of the metric." Some interact via weak forces, some by way of electromagnetic forces, and some through strong forces. These interactions have the greatest variety of strengths. But must not all these particles and interactions have their origin in something fantastically simple? And must not this something, this "pregeometry," be as far removed from geometry as the quantum mechanics of electrons is far removed from elasticity?

If one once thought of general relativity as a guide to the discovery of pregeometry, nothing might seem more dismaying than this comparison with an older realm of physics. No one would dream of studying the laws of elasticity to uncover the principles of quantum mechanics. Neither would anyone investigate the work-hardening of a metal to learn about atomic physics. The order of understanding ran not

$$\text{Work-hardening (1 cm)} \longrightarrow \text{dislocations } (10^{-4}\text{ cm}) \longrightarrow \text{atoms } (10^{-8}\text{ cm}),$$

but the direct opposite,

$$\text{Atoms } (10^{-8}\text{ cm}) \longrightarrow \text{dislocations } (10^{-4}\text{ cm}) \longrightarrow \text{work-hardening (1 cm)}$$

One had to know about atoms to conceive of dislocations, and had to know about dislocations to understand work-hardening. Is it not likewise hopeless to go from the "elasticity of geometry" to an understanding of particle physics, and from particle physics to the uncovering of pregeometry? Must not the order of progress again be the direct opposite? And is not the source of any dismay the apparent loss of guidance that one experiences in giving up geometrodynamics—and not only geometrodynamics, but geometry itself—as a crutch to lean on as one hobbles forward? Yet there is so much chance that this view of nature is right that one must take it seriously and explore its consequences. Never more than today does one have the incentive to explore pregeometry.

§44.5. PREGEOMETRY AS THE CALCULUS OF PROPOSITIONS

Paper in white the floor of the room, and rule it off in one-foot squares. Down on one's hands and knees, write in the first square a set of equations conceived as able to govern the physics of the universe. Think more overnight. Next day put a better set of equations into square two. Invite one's most respected colleagues to contribute to other squares. At the end of these labors, one has worked oneself out into the door way. Stand up, look back on all those equations, some perhaps more hopeful than others, raise one's finger commandingly, and give the order "Fly!" Not one of those equations will put on wings, take off, or fly. Yet the universe "flies."

Search for the central principle of pregeometry

Some principle uniquely right and uniquely simple must, when one knows it, be also so compelling that it is clear the universe is built, and must be built, in such and such a way, and that it could not possibly be otherwise. But how can one discover that principle? If it was hopeless to learn atomic physics by studying work-hardening and dislocations, it may be equally hopeless to learn the basic operating principle of the universe, call it pregeometry or call it what one will, by any amount of work in general relativity and particle physics.

Thomas Mann (1937), in his essay on Freud, utters what Niels Bohr would surely have called a great truth ("A great truth is a truth whose opposite is also a great truth") when he says, "Science never makes an advance until philosophy authorizes and encourages it to do so." If the equivalence principle (Chapter 16) and Mach's principle (§21.9) were the philosophical godfathers of general relativity, it is also true that what those principles do mean, and ought to mean, only becomes clear by study and restudy of Einstein's theory itself. Therefore it would seem reasonable to expect the primary guidance in the search for pregeometry to come from a principle both philosophical and powerful, but one also perhaps not destined to be wholly clear in its contents or its implications until some later day.

Among all the principles that one can name out of the world of science, it is difficult to think of one more compelling than *simplicity;* and among all the simplicities of dynamics and life and movement, none is starker [Werner (1969)] than the *binary choice* yes–no or true–false. It in no way proves that this choice for a starting principle is correct, but it at least gives one some comfort in the choice, that Pauli's "nonclassical two-valuedness" or "spin" so dominates the world of particle physics.

It is one thing to have a start, a tentative construction of pregeometry; but how does one go on? How not to go on is illustrated by Figure 44.3. The "sewing machine" builds objects of one or another definite dimensionality, or of mixed dimensionalities, according to the instructions that it receives on the input tape in yes–no binary code. Some of the difficulties of building up structure on the binary element according to this model, or any one of a dozen other models, stand out at once. (1) Why $N = 10{,}000$ building units? Why not a different N? And if one feeds in one such arbitrary number at the start, why not fix more features "by hand?" No natural stopping point is evident, nor any principle that would fix such a stopping point. Such arbitrariness contradicts the principle of simplicity and rules out the model. (2) Quantum mechanics is added from outside, not generated from inside (from the model itself). On this point too the principle of simplicity speaks against the model. (3) The passage from pregeometry to geometry is made in a too-literal-minded way, with no appreciation of the need for particles and fields to appear along the way. The model, in the words used by Bohr on another occasion, is "crazy, but not crazy enough to be right."

A first try at a pregeometry built on the principle of binary choice

Noting these difficulties, and fruitlessly trying model after model of pregeometry to see if it might be free of them, one suddenly realizes that a machinery for the combination of yes–no or true–false elements does not have to be invented. It already exists. What else can pregeometry be, one asks oneself, than the calculus of propositions? (Box 44.5.)

A more reasonable picture: pregeometry is the calculus of propositions

§44.6. THE BLACK BOX: THE REPROCESSING OF THE UNIVERSE

No amount of searching has ever disclosed a "cheap way" out of gravitational collapse, any more than earlier it revealed a cheap way out of the collapse of the atom. Physicists in that earlier crisis found themselves in the end confronted with a revolutionary pistol, "Understand nothing—or accept the quantum principle." Today's crisis can hardly force a lesser revolution. One sees no alternative except to say that geometry fails and pregeometry has to take its place to ferry physics through the final stages of gravitational collapse and on into what happens next. No guide is evident on this uncharted way except the principle of simplicity, applied to drastic lengths.

Whether the whole universe is squeezed down to the Planck dimension, or more or less, before reexpansion can begin and dynamics can return to normal, may be irrelevant for some of the questions one wants to consider. Physics has long used the "black box" to symbolize situations where one wishes to concentrate on what goes in and what goes out, disregarding what takes place in between.

The role of the black box in physics

At the beginning of the crisis of electric collapse one conceived of the electron as headed on a deterministic path toward a point-center of attraction, and unhappily destined to arrive at a condition of infinite kinetic energy in a finite time. After the advent of quantum mechanics, one learned to summarize the interaction between

(continued on page 1213)

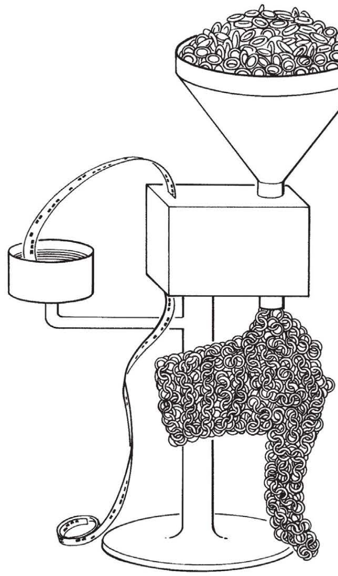


Figure 44.3.
"Ten thousand rings"; or an example of a way to think of the connection between pregeometry and geometry, wrong because it is too literal-minded, and for other reasons spelled out in the text. The vizier [story by Wheeler, as alluded to by Kilmister (1971)*] speaks: "Take $N = 10{,}000$ brass rings. Take an automatic fastening device that will cut open a ring, loop it through another ring, and resolder the joint. Pour the brass rings into the hopper that feeds this machine. Take a strip of instruction paper that is long enough to contain $N(N-1)/2$ binary digits. Look at the instruction in the (jk)-th location on this instruction tape ($j,k = 1, 2, \ldots, N$; $j < k$). When the binary digit at that location is 0, it is a signal to leave the j-th ring disconnected from the k-th ring. When it is 1, it is an instruction to connect that particular pair of rings. Thread the tape into the machine and press the start button. The clatter begins. Out comes a chain of rings 10,000 links long. It falls on the table and the machine stops. Pour in another 10,000 rings, feed in a new instruction tape, and push the button again. This time it is not a one-dimensional structure that emerges, but a two-dimensional one: a Crusader's coat of mail, complete with neck opening and sleeves. Take still another tape from the library of tapes and repeat. Onto the table thuds a smaller version of the suit of mail, this time filled out internally with a solid network of rings, a three-dimensional structure. Now forego the library and make one's own instruction tape, a random string of 0's and 1's. Guided by it, the fastener produces a "Christmas tree ornament," a collection of segments of one-dimensional chain, two-dimensional surfaces, and three-, four-, five-, and higher-dimensional entities, some joined together, some free-floating. Now turn from a structure deterministically fixed by a tape to a probability amplitude, a complex number,

$$\psi(\text{tape}) = \psi(n_{12}, n_{13}, n_{14}, \ldots\ldots, n_{N-1,N}) \qquad (n_{ij} = 0, 1), \tag{1}$$

defined over the entire range of possibilities for structures built of 10,000 rings. Let these probability amplitudes *not* be assigned randomly. Instead, couple together amplitudes, for structures that differ from each other by the breaking of a single ring, by linear formulas that treat all rings on the same footing. The separate ψ's, no longer entirely independent, will still give non-zero probability amplitudes for "Christmas tree ornaments." Of greater immediate interest than these "unruly" parts of the structures are the following questions about the smoother parts: (1) In what kinds of structures is the bulk of the probability concentrated? (2) What is the dominant dimensionality of these structures in an appropriate correspondence principle limit? (3) In this semiclassical limit, what is the form taken by the dynamic law of evolution of the geometry?" No principle more clearly rules out this model for pregeometry than the principle of simplicity (see text).

*Wheeler's story about the vizier and what the vizier had to say about superspace was told at the May 18, 1970, Gwatt Seminar on the Bearings of Topology upon General Relativity. Kilmister's (1971) published article alludes to the unpublished story, but does not actually contain it.

Box 44.5 "PREGEOMETRY AS THE CALCULUS OF PROPOSITIONS"

A sample proposition taken out of a standard text on logic selected almost at random reads [Kneebone (1963), p. 40]

$$[X \longrightarrow ((X \longrightarrow X) \longrightarrow Y)] \,\&\, (\bar{X} \longrightarrow Z) \;\mathrm{eq}\; (\bar{X} \vee Y \vee Z) \,\&\, (\bar{X} \vee Y \vee \bar{Z}) \,\&\, (X \vee Y \vee Z) \,\&\, (X \vee \bar{Y} \vee Z).$$

The symbols have the following meaning:

$\bar{A}$,	Not A;
$A \vee B$,	A or B or both ("A *vel* B");
$A \,\&\, B$,	A and B;
$A \longrightarrow B$,	A implies B ("if A, then B");
$A \longleftrightarrow B$,	B is equivalent to A ("B if and only if A").

Propositional formula $\mathfrak{A}$ is said to be equivalent ("eq") to propositional formula $\mathfrak{B}$ if and only if $\mathfrak{A} \longleftrightarrow \mathfrak{B}$ is a tautology. The letters A, B, etc., serve as connectors to "wire together" one proposition with another. Proceeding in this way, one can construct propositions of indefinitely great length.

A switching circuit [see, for example, Shannon (1938) or Hohn (1966)] is isomorphic to a proposition.

Compare a short proposition or an elementary switching circuit to a molecular collision. No idea seemed more preposterous than that of Daniel Bernoulli (1733), that heat is a manifestation of molecular collisions. Moreover, a three-body encounter is difficult to treat, a four-body collision is more difficult, and a five- or more molecule system is essentially intractable. Nevertheless, mechanics acquires new elements of simplicity in the limit in which the number of molecules is very great and in which one can use the concept of density in phase space. Out of statistical mechanics in this limit come such concepts as temperature and entropy. When the temperature is well-defined, the energy of the system is not a well-defined idea; and when the energy is well-defined, the temperature is not. This complementarity is built inescapably into the principles of the subject. Thrust the finger into the flame of a match and experience a sensation like nothing else on heaven or earth; yet what happens is all a consequence of molecular collisions, early critics notwithstanding.

Any individual proposition is difficult for the mind to apprehend when it is long; and still more difficult to grasp is the content of a cluster of propositions. Nevertheless, make a statistical analysis of the calculus of propositions in the limit where the number of propositions is great and most of them are long. Ask if parameters force themselves on one's attention in this analysis (1) analogous in some small measure to the temperature and entropy of statistical mechanics but (2) so much

Box 44.5 (*continued*)

more numerous, and everyday dynamic in character, that they reproduce the continuum of everyday physics.

Nothing could seem so preposterous at first glance as the thought that nature is built on a foundation as ethereal as the calculus of propositions. Yet, beyond the push to look in this direction provided by the principle of simplicity, there are two pulls. First, bare-bones quantum mechanics lends itself in a marvelously natural way to formulation in the language of the calculus of propositions, as witnesses not least the book of Jauch (1968). If the quantum principle were not in this way already automatically contained in one's proposed model for pregeometry, and if in contrast it had to be introduced from outside, by that very token one would conclude that the model violated the principle of simplicity, and would have to reject it. Second, the pursuit of reality seems always to take one away from reality. Who would have imagined describing something so much a part of the here and now as gravitation in terms of curvature of the geometry of spacetime? And when later this geometry came to be recognized as dynamic, who would have dreamed that geometrodynamics unfolds in an arena so ethereal as superspace? Little astonishment there should be, therefore, if the description of nature carries one in the end to logic, the ethereal eyrie at the center of mathematics. If, as one believes, all mathematics reduces to the mathematics of logic, and all physics reduces to mathematics, what alternative is there but for all physics to reduce to the mathematics of logic? Logic is the only branch of mathematics that can "think about itself."

"An issue of logic having nothing to do with physics" was the assessment by many of a controversy of old about the axiom, "parallel lines never meet." Does it follow from the other axioms of Euclidean geometry or is it independent? "Independent," Bolyai and Lobachevsky proved. With this and the work of Gauss as a start, Riemann went on to create Riemannian geometry. Study nature, not Euclid, to find out about geometry, he advised; and Einstein went on to take that advice and to make geometry a part of physics.

"An issue of logic having nothing to do with physics" is one's natural first assessment of the startling limitations on logic discovered by Gödel (1931), Cohen (1966), and others [for a review, see, for example, Kac and Ulam (1968)]. The exact opposite must be one's assessment if the real pregeometry of the real physical world indeed turns out to be identical with the calculus of propositions.

"Physics as manifestation of logic" or "pregeometry as the calculus of propositions" is as yet [Wheeler (1971a)] not an idea, but an idea for an idea. It is put forward here only to make it a little clearer what it means to suggest that the order of progress may not be

$$\text{physics} \longrightarrow \text{pregeometry}$$

but

$$\text{pregeometry} \longrightarrow \text{physics}.$$

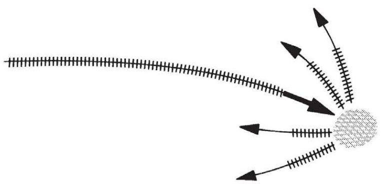


Figure 44.4.
The "black-box model" applied (1) to the scattering of an electron by a center of attraction and (2) to the collapse of the universe itself. The deterministic electron world line of classical theory is replaced in quantum theory by a probability amplitude, the wave crests of which are illustrated schematically in the diagram. The catastrophe of classical theory is replaced in quantum theory by a probability distribution of outputs. The same diagram illustrates the "black-box account" of gravitational collapse mentioned in the text. The arena of the diagram is no longer spacetime, but superspace. The incident arrow marks no longer a classical world line of an electron through spacetime, but a classical "leaf of history of geometry" slicing through superspace (Chapter 43). The wave crests symbolize no longer the electron wave function propagating through spacetime, but the geometrodynamic wave function propagating through superspace. The cross-hatched region is no longer the region where the one-body potential goes to infinity, but the region of gravitational collapse where the curvature of space goes to infinity. The outgoing waves describe no longer alternative directions for the new course of the scattered electron, but the beginnings of alternative new histories for the universe itself after collapse and "reprocessing" end the present cycle.

center of attraction and electron in a "black box:" fire in a wave-train of electrons traveling in one direction, and get electrons coming out in this, that, and the other direction with this, that, and the other well-determined probability amplitude (Figure 44.4). Moreover, to predict these probability amplitudes quantitatively and correctly, it was enough to translate the Hamiltonian of classical theory into the language of wave mechanics and solve the resulting wave equation, the key to the "black box."

Probability distribution of the outcomes of collapse

A similar "black box" view of gravitational collapse leads one to expect a "probability distribution of outcomes." Here, however, one outcome is distinguished from another, one must anticipate, not by a single parameter, such as the angle of scattering of the electron, but by many. They govern, one foresees, such quantities as the size of the system at its maximum of expansion, the time from the start of this new cycle to the moment it ends in collapse, the number of particles present, and a thousand other features. The "probabilities" of these outcomes will be governed by a dynamic law, analogous to (1) the Schrödinger wave equation for the electron, or, to cite another black box problem, (2) the Maxwell equations that couple together, at a wave-guide junction, electromagnetic waves running in otherwise separate wave guides. However, it is hardly reasonable to expect the necessary dynamic law to spring forth as soon as one translates the Hamilton-Jacobi equation of general relativity (Chapter 43) into a Schrödinger equation, simply because geometrodynamics, in both its classical and its quantum version, is built on standard differential geometry. That standard geometry leaves no room for any of those quantum fluctuations in connectivity that seem inescapable at small distances and therefore also inescapable in the final stages of gravitational collapse. Not geometry, but pregeometry, must fill the black box of gravitational collapse.

"Reprocessing" the universe

Little as one knows the internal machinery of the black box, one sees no escape from this picture of what goes on: the universe transforms, or transmutes, or transits, or is *reprocessed* probabilistically from one cycle of history to another in the era of collapse.

However straightforwardly and inescapably this picture of the reprocessing of the universe would seem to follow from the leading features of general relativity and the quantum principle, the two overarching principles of twentieth-century physics, it is nevertheless fantastic to contemplate. How can the dynamics of a system so incredibly gigantic be switched, and switched at the whim of probability, from one cycle that has lasted 10^{11} years to one that will last only 10^6 years? At first, only the circumstance that the system gets squeezed down in the course of this dynamics to incredibly small distances reconciles one to a transformation otherwise so unbelievable. Then one looks at the upended strata of a mountain slope, or a bird not seen before, and marvels that the whole universe is incredible:

> mutation of a species,
> metamorphosis of a rock,
> chemical transformation,
> spontaneous transformation of a nucleus,
> radioactive decay of a particle,
> reprocessing of the universe itself.

If it cast a new light on geology to know that rocks can be raised and lowered thousands of meters and hundreds of degrees, what does it mean for physics to think of the universe as being from time to time "squeezed through a knothole," drastically "reprocessed," and started out on a fresh dynamic cycle? Three considerations above all press themselves on one's attention, prefigured in these compressed phrases:

> destruction of all constants of motion in collapse;
> particles, and the physical "constants" themselves, as the
> "frozen-in part of the meteorology of collapse;"
> "the biological selection of physical constants."

All conservation laws transcended in the collapse of the universe

The gravitational collapse of a star, or a collection of stars, to a black hole extinguishes all details of the system (see Chapters 32 and 33) except mass and charge and angular momentum. Whether made of matter or antimatter or radiation, whether endowed with much entropy or little entropy, whether in smooth motion or chaotic turbulence, the collapsing system ends up as seen from outside, according to all indications, in the same standard state. The laws of conservation of baryon number and lepton number are transcended [Chapter 33; also Wheeler (1971b)]. No known means whatsoever will distinguish between black holes of the most different provenance if only they have the same mass, charge, and angular momentum. But for a closed universe, even these constants vanish from the scene. Total charge is automatically zero because lines of force have nowhere to end except upon charge. Total mass and total angular momentum have absolutely no definable meaning whatsoever for a closed universe. This conclusion follows not least because there is no asymptotically flat space outside where one can put a test particle into Keplerian orbit to determine period and precession.

Of all principles of physics, the laws of conservation of charge, lepton number, baryon number, mass, and angular momentum are among the most firmly established. Yet with gravitational collapse the content of these conservation laws also collapses. The established is disestablished. No determinant of motion does one see left that could continue unchanged in value from cycle to cycle of the universe. Moreover, if particles are dynamic in construction, and if the spectrum of particle masses is therefore dynamic in origin, no option would seem left except to conclude that the mass spectrum is itself reprocessed at the time when "the universe is squeezed through a knot hole." A molecule in this piece of paper is a "fossil" from photochemical synthesis in a tree a few years ago. A nucleus of the oxygen in this air is a fossil from thermonuclear combustion at a much higher temperature in a star a few 10^9 years ago. What else can a particle be but a fossil from the most violent event of all, gravitational collapse?

Three hierarchies of fossils: molecules, nuclei, particles

That one geological stratum has one many-miles long slope, with marvelous linearity of structure, and another stratum has another slope, is either an everyday triteness, taken as for granted by every passerby, or a miracle, until one understands the mechanism. That an electron here has the same mass as an electron there is also a triviality or a miracle. It is a triviality in quantum electrodynamics because it is assumed rather than derived. However, it is a miracle on any view that regards the universe as being from time to time "reprocessed." How can electrons at different times and places in the present cycle of the universe have the same mass if the spectrum of particle masses differs between one cycle of the universe and another?

Inspect the interior of a particle of one type, and magnify it up enormously, and in that interior see one view of the whole universe [compare the concept of monad of Leibniz (1714), "The monads have no window through which anything can enter or depart"]; and do likewise for another particle of the same type. Are particles of the same pattern identical in any one cycle of the universe because they give identically patterned views of the same universe? No acceptable explanation for the miraculous identity of particles of the same type has ever been put forward. That identity must be regarded, not as a triviality, but as a central mystery of physics.

Reason for identity in mass of particles of the same species?

Not the spectrum of particle masses alone, but the physical "constants" themselves, would seem most reasonably regarded as reprocessed from one cycle to another. Reprocessed relative to what? Relative, for example, to the Planck system of units,

Reprocessing of physical constants

$$L^* = (\hbar G/c^3)^{1/2} = 1.6 \times 10^{-33}\ \text{cm},$$
$$T^* = (\hbar G/c^5)^{1/2} = 5.4 \times 10^{-44}\ \text{sec},$$
$$M^* = (\hbar c/G)^{1/2} = 2.2 \times 10^{-5}\ \text{g},$$

the only system of units, Planck (1899) pointed out, free, like black-body radiation itself, of all complications of solid-state physics, molecular binding, atomic constitution, and elementary particle structure, and drawing for its background only on the simplest and most universal principles of physics, the laws of gravitation and black-body radiation. Relative to the Planck units, every constant in every other part of physics is expressed as a pure number.

No pure numbers in physics are more impressive than $\hbar c/e^2 = 137.0360$ and the so-called "big numbers" [Eddington (1931, 1936, 1946); Dirac (1937, 1938); Jordan (1955, 1959); Dicke (1959b, 1961, 1964b); Hayakawa (1965a,b); Carter (1968b)]:

$$\sim 10^{80} \text{ particles in the universe,}^*$$

$$\sim 10^{40} \sim \frac{10^{28}\text{ cm}}{10^{-12}\text{ cm}} \sim \frac{\begin{pmatrix}\text{radius of universe at}\\ \text{maximum expansion}\end{pmatrix}^*}{\begin{pmatrix}\text{"size" of an elementary}\\ \text{particle}\end{pmatrix}},$$

$$\sim 10^{40} \sim \frac{e^2}{GmM} \sim \frac{(\text{electric forces})}{(\text{gravitational forces})},$$

$$\sim 10^{20} \sim \frac{e^2/mc^2}{(\hbar G/c^3)^{1/2}} \sim \frac{\begin{pmatrix}\text{"size" of an elementary}\\ \text{particle}\end{pmatrix}}{(\text{Planck length})},$$

$$\sim 10^{10} \sim \frac{\begin{pmatrix}\text{number of photons}\\ \text{in universe}\end{pmatrix}}{\begin{pmatrix}\text{number of baryons}\\ \text{in universe}\end{pmatrix}}.$$

Some understanding of the relationships between these numbers has been won [Carter (1968b)]. Never has any explanation appeared for their enormous magnitude, nor will there ever, if the view is correct that reprocessing the universe reprocesses also the physical constants. These constants on that view are not part of the laws of physics. They are part of the initial-value data. Such numbers are freshly given for each fresh cycle of expansion of the universe. To look for a physical explanation for the "big numbers" would thus seem to be looking for the right answer to the wrong question.

In the week between one storm and the next, most features of the weather are ever-changing, but some special patterns of the wind last the week. If the term "frozen features of the meteorology" is appropriate for them, much more so would it seem appropriate for the big numbers, the physical constants and the spectrum of particle masses in the cycle between one reprocessing of the universe and another.

Values of physical constants as related to the possibilities for life

A per cent or so change one way in one of the "constants," $\hbar c/e^2$, will cause all stars to be red stars; and a comparable change the other way will make all stars be blue stars, according to Carter (1968b). In neither case will any star like the sun be possible. He raises the question whether life could have developed if the determinants of the physical constants had differed substantially from those that characterize this cycle of the universe.

Dicke (1961) has pointed out that the right order of ideas may not be, here is the universe, so what must man be; but here is man, so what must the universe

*Values based on the "typical cosmological model" of Box 27.4; subject to much uncertainty, in the present state of astrophysical distance determinations, not least because the latitude in these numbers is even enough to be compatible with an open universe.

be? In other words: (1) What good is a universe without awareness of that universe? But: (2) Awareness demands life. (3) Life demands the presence of elements heavier than hydrogen. (4) The production of heavy elements demands thermonuclear combustion. (5) Thermonuclear combustion normally requires several 10^9 years of cooking time in a star. (6) Several 10^9 years of time will not and cannot be available in a closed universe, according to general relativity, unless the radius-at-maximum-expansion of that universe is several 10^9 light years or more. So why on this view is the universe as big as it is? Because only so can man be here!

In brief, the considerations of Carter and Dicke would seem to raise the idea of the "biological selection of physical constants." However, to "select" is impossible unless there are options to select between. Exactly such options would seem for the first time to be held out by the only over-all picture of the gravitational collapse of the universe that one sees how to put forward today, the *pregeometry black-box model of the reprocessing of the universe.*

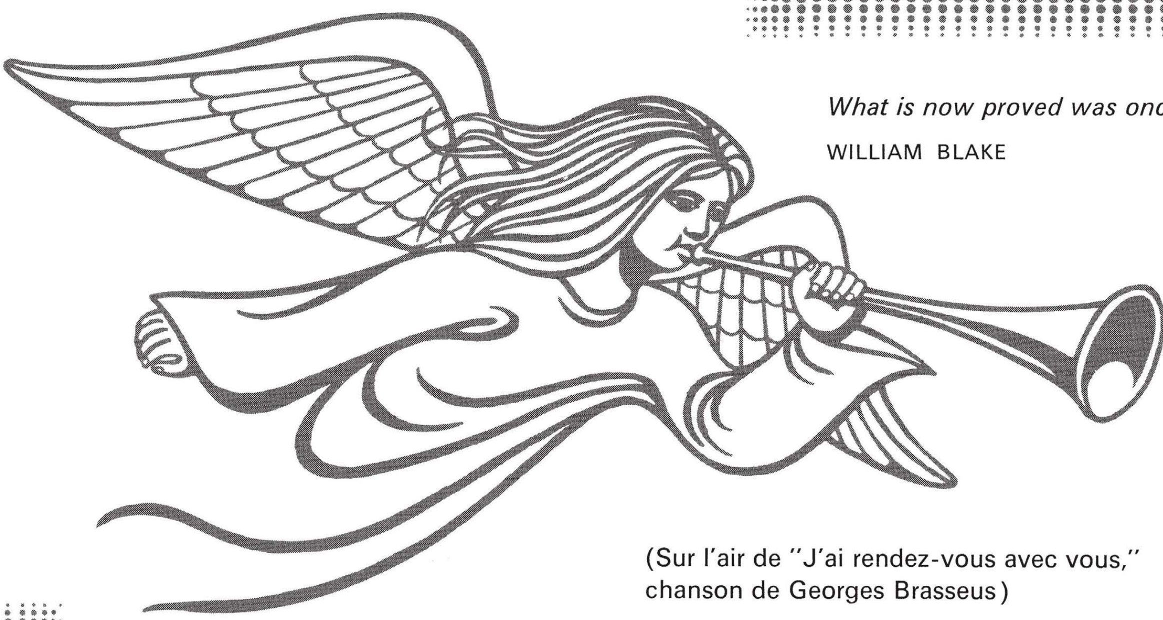
Proceeding with all caution into uncharted territory, one must nevertheless be aware that the conclusions one is reaching and the questions one is asking at a given stage of the analysis may be only stepping stones on the way to still more penetrating questions and an even more remarkable picture. To speak of "reprocessing and selection" may only be a halfway point on the road toward thinking of the universe as Leibniz did, as a world of relationships, not a world of machinery. Far from being brought into its present condition by "reprocessing" from earlier cycles, may the universe in some strange sense be "brought into being" by the participation of those who participate? On this view the concept of "cycles" would even seem to be altogether wrong. Instead the vital act is the act of participation. "Participator" is the incontrovertible new concept given by quantum mechanics; it strikes down the term "observer" of classical theory, the man who stands safely behind the thick glass wall and watches what goes on without taking part. It can't be done, quantum mechanics says. Even with the lowly electron one must participate before one can give any meaning whatsoever to its position or its momentum. Is this firmly established result the tiny tip of a giant iceberg? Does the universe also derive its meaning from "participation"? Are we destined to return to the great concept of Leibniz, of "preestablished harmony" ("Leibniz logic loop"), before we can make the next great advance?

Black hole as "laboratory" model for collapse of universe

Rich prospects stand open for investigation in gravitation physics, from neutron stars to cosmology and from post-Newtonian celestial mechanics to gravitational waves. Einstein's geometrodynamics exposes itself to destruction on a dozen fronts and by a thousand predictions. No predictions subject to early test are more entrancing than those on the formation and properties of a black hole, "laboratory model" for some of what is predicted for the universe itself. No field is more pregnant with the future than gravitational collapse. No more revolutionary views of man and the universe has one ever been driven to consider seriously than those that come out of pondering the paradox of collapse, the greatest crisis of physics of all time.

All of these endeavors are based on the belief that existence should have a completely harmonious structure. Today we have less ground than ever before for allowing ourselves to be forced away from this wonderful belief.

EINSTEIN (1934)



What is now proved was once only imagin'd.

WILLIAM BLAKE

We will first understand
How simple the universe is
When we realize
How strange it is.

ANON.

To some one who could grasp the
universe from a unified standpoint,
the entire creation would appear
as a unique truth and necessity.

J. D'ALEMBERT

Yo ho, it's hot . . . the sun is not
A place where we could live
But here on earth there'd be no life
Without the light it gives

H. ZARET

Probable-Possible, my black hen,
She lays eggs in the Relative When.
She doesn't lay eggs in the Positive Now
Because she's unable to postulate How.

F. WINSOR

(Sur l'air de "J'ai rendez-vous avec vous,"
chanson de Georges Brasseus)

Le Rayonnement dipolaire
On sait qu'il n'est pas pour nous
C'est pour Maxwell, oui mais Maxwell on s'en fout
Tout est r'latif après tout

Un argument qu'on révère
Celui de Synge pour dire le tout
Nous promet le quadrupolaire
Tout est r'latif après tout

Les sources quasi stellaires
Disparaissent comme dans un trou
Dans le Schwarzschild, oui mais Schwarzschild on s'en fout
Tout est r'latif après tout

Aux solutions singulières
On préfère et de beaucoup
Une métrique partout régulière
Tout est r'latif après tout

Les physiciens nucléaires
Comme ils nous aiment pas beaucoup
Y gardent tout l'fric, oui mais le fric on s'en fout
Tout est r'latif après tout

Les expériences de Weber
Le gyroscope, ça coûtent des sous
Celles de pensées sont moins chères
Tout est r'latif après tout

M. A. TONNELAT

"Omnibus ex nihil ducendis sufficit unum!"
(One suffices to create Everything of nothing!)

GOTTFRIED WILHELM VON LEIBNIZ

(Sur l'air de Auprès de ma blonde)

Dans les jardins d'Asnières
La science a refleuri
Tous les savants du monde
Apportent leurs écrits

Refrain:

Auprès de nos ondes
Qu'il fait bon, fait bon, fait bon
Auprès de nos ondes
Qu'il fait bon rêver

Tous les savants du monde
Apportent leurs écrits
Loi gravitationnelle
Sans tenseur d'énergie

Loi gravitationnelle
Sans tenseur d'énergie
De ravissants modèles
Pour la cosmologie

De ravissants modèles
Pour la cosmologie
Pour moi ne m'en faut guère
Car j'en ai un joli

Pour moi ne m'en faut guère
Car j'en ai un joli
Il est dans ma cervelle
Voici mon manuscrit

Le champ laisse des plumes
Aux bosses de l'espace-temps
En prendrons quelques unes
Pour décrire le mouvement

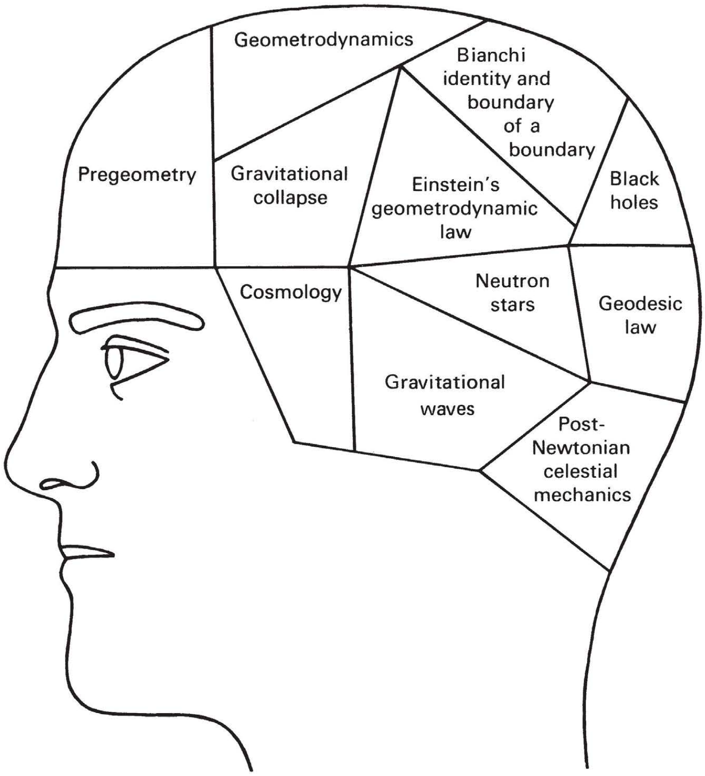
C. CATTANEO, J. GÉHÉNIAU
M. MAVRIDES, and M. A. TONNELAT

When Arthur Evans began this excavation
neither he nor anyone knew that he
would uncover an unknown world.

PAT (Mrs. Hypatia Vourloumis
at Knossos (1971))

And as imagination bodies forth
The form of things unknown, the poet's pen
Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing
A local habitation and a name.

SHAKESPEARE



Appreciation and farewell to our patient reader.

Charles W. Misner   Kip S. Thorne   John A. Wheeler

BIBLIOGRAPHY AND INDEX OF NAMES

This bibliography, like that of Synge (1960b), merely provides points of entry into the literature, which is far too extensive for a comprehensive listing. For more extensive bibliographies of certain segments of the literature, see, for example, Lecat (1924), Boni, Russ, and Laurence (1960), Chick (1960, 1964), and Combridge (1965). Citations are sometimes not to the earliest publication, but to a later and more accessible source. For ease of reference, conference and summer-school proceedings are cited both under editors' names and under the more familiar place names (Brandeis, Les Houches, Varenna, etc.). Persons mentioned in the text without explicit bibliographical reference are also indexed here. Most doctoral dissertations in the United States are available from University Microfilms, Inc., Ann Arbor, Mich. 48106. Appreciation is expressed to Gregory Cherlin for preparing the initial version of this bibliography, to Nigel Coote for numerous subsequent amendments, and to colleagues without whose help some of the most elusive, and most important, of these references would have escaped capture.

Adler, R., M. Bazin, and M. Schiffer, 1965, *Introduction to General Relativity,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [endpapers]

Aharonov, Y., and L. Susskind, 1967, "Observability of the sign change of spinors under 2π rotations," *Phys. Rev. 158,* 1237–1238. [§41.5]

Ahrens, L. H., F. Press, and S. K. Runcorn, eds., 1964, *Physics and Chemistry of the Earth,* Pergamon Press, London. *Cited under* Bolt 1964.

al Bīrūnī, Abū Raihān, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Aldrin, E. E., Jr., *cited by name in* Fig. 40.4.

Alfvén, H., 1971, "Plasma physics applied to cosmology," *Phys. Today 24* (Feb. 1971), 28–33. [§§27.10, 27.11, 28.4]

Alfvén, H., and O. Klein, 1962, "Matter-antimatter annihilation and cosmology," *Ark. Fys. 23,* 187–194. [§§27.10, 27.11, 28.4, Box 27.7]

al Khazini, 1115, *Book of the Balance of Wisdom,* partially edited and translated by N. Khanikoff in *J. Am. Oriental Soc. 6* (1860), 25–38. [§1.7]

Allen, C. W., 1963, *Astrophysical Quantities,* University of London, Athlone Press, London. [§36.6, Box 25.1, endpapers]

Allendoerfer, C., and A. Weil, 1943, "The Gauss-Bonnet theorem for Riemannian polyhedra," *Trans. Am. Math. Soc. 53,* 101–129. [Box 15.3]

Alley, C. O., *cited by name in* Fig. 40.4. *See also* Bender *et al.* 1971.

Alpher, R. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Alpher, R. A., and R. C. Herman 1948a, "Evolution of the universe," *Nature 162,* 774–775. [§28.1]

Alpher, R. A., and R. C. Herman, 1948b, "On the relative abundance of the elements," *Phys. Rev. 74,* 1737–1742. [§28.1]

Alpher, R. A., and R. C. Herman, 1950, "Theory of the origin and relative-abundance distribution of the elements," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 22,* 153–213. [§28.1]

American Ephemeris and Nautical Almanac for 1964, 1962, U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, D.C. [Fig. 25.1]

Ames, W. L., and K. S. Thorne, 1968, "The optical appearance of a star that is collapsing through its gravitational radius," *Astrophys. J. 151,* 659–670. [§32.3]

Anderson, C. D., 1933, "The positive electron," *Phys. Rev. 43,* 491–494. [§44.4]

Anderson, D. W., E. H. Brown, Jr., and F. P. Peterson, 1966a, "Spin cobordism," *Bull. Am. Math. Soc. 72,* 256–260. [Box 44.3]

Anderson, D. W., E. H. Brown, Jr., and F. P. Peterson, 1966b, "SU-cobordism, KO-characteristic numbers, and the Kervaire invariant," *Ann. Math. 83,* 54. [Box 44.3]

Anderson, J. D., 1973, "Lectures on physical and technical problems posed by precision radio tracking," in Bertotti 1973. [§40.1]

Anderson, J. D., P. B. Esposito, W. L. Martin, and D. O. Muhleman, 1971, "Measurements of the general relativistic time delay with data from Mariners 6 and 7," in Davies 1971, pp. 111–135. [Box 40.2]

Anderson, J. L., 1967, *Principles of Relativity Physics,* Academic Press, New York. [§17.6, endpapers]

Anderson, J. L., 1970, "Relativistic Boltzmann theory and the Grad method of moments," in Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970, pp. 109–124. [Ex. 22.7]

Anonymous, source of quotation at end of Chapter 44: found on beach at Rincon, Puerto Rico, March 21, 1973.

Aristotle, *ca.* 330 B.C., *Physics,* ed. by W. D. Ross, Clarendon Press, Oxford (1950). [Box 1.2] *See also* Guthrie 1939, Warrington 1956.

Armstrong, N. A., *cited by name in* Fig. 40.4.

Arnett, W. D., 1966, "Gravitational collapse and weak interactions," *Can. J. Phys. 44,* 2553–2594. [§32.7]

Arnett, W. D., 1967, "Mass dependence in gravitational collapse of stellar cores," *Can. J. Phys. 45,* 1621–1641. [§32.7]

Arnold, V. I., and A. Avez. 1968, *Ergodic Problems of Classical Mechanics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§8.2]

Arnowitt, R., *cited by name in* §§21.1, 35.8, Box 17.2.

Arnowitt, R., S. Deser, and C. W. Misner, 1962, "The dynamics of general relativity," in Witten 1962, pp. 227–265. [§§21.1, 21.4, 21.5, 21.6, 21.7, 21.8, 35.4]

Arp, H., 1971, "Observational paradoxes in extragalactic astronomy," *Science 174,* 1189–1200. [Box 28.1]

Ash, M. E. *See* Shapiro, Ash, *et. al.* 1971, Shapiro, Smith, *et. al.* 1971, Shapiro *et. al.* 1972.

Auslander, L., and R. E. MacKenzie, 1963, *Introduction to Differentiable Manifolds,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [Box 8.1]

Auslander, L., and L. Markus, 1959, *Flat Lorentz 3-Manifolds,* American Mathematical Society, Providence, R.I. [Box 27.2]

Avez, A., 1960, "Propriétés globales des espace-temps périodiques clos," *Acad. des Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 250,* 3583–3587. [§44.1]

Avez, A., 1964, "Le ds^2 de Schwarzschild parmi les ds^2 stationnaires," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré A1,* 291–300. [§23.1]

Avez, A. *See also* Arnold and Avez 1968.

Avicenna, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Baade, W., 1942, "The Crab Nebula," *Astrophys. J. 96,* 188–198. [Box 24.1]

Baade, W., 1952, Report to Commission 28 of I.A.U., Rome, September 1952. [Box 27.1]

Baade, W., 1956. "The period-luminosity relation of the cepheids," *Pub. Astron. Soc. Pacific, 28,* 5–16. [Box 27.1]

Baade, W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Baade, W., and F. Zwicky, 1934a, "Cosmic rays from supernovae," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 20,* 259–263. [Box 24.1]

Baade, W., and F. Zwicky, 1934b, "On supernovae," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 20,* 254–259. [Box 24.1]

Baade, W., and F. Zwicky, 1934c. "Supernovae and cosmic rays," *Phys. Rev. 45,* 138. Abstract of paper presented at Stanford meeting of Amer. Phys. Soc., Dec. 15–16, 1933. [Box 24.1]

Bacon, R., 1268, *Opus Majus,* J. H. Bridges, ed., Clarendon Press, Oxford, Eng. Vols. 1 and 2, 1897; vol. 3, 1900. [Box 27.7]

Bahcall, J. N., W. L. W. Sargent, and M. Schmidt, 1967, "An analysis of the absorption spectrum of 3C191," *Astrophys. J. 149,* 11–15. [§38.6]

Bahcall, J. N., and M. Schmidt, 1967, "Does the fine-structure constant vary with cosmic time?" *Phys. Rev. Lett. 19,* 1294–1295. [§38.6]

Baierlein, R. F., 1967, "Testing general relativity with laser ranging to the moon," *Phys. Rev. 162,* 1275–1288. [§40.6]

Baierlein, R. F., *cited by name in* §21.1. *See also* Krogh and Baierlein 1968.

Baierlein, R. F., D. H. Sharp, and J. A. Wheeler, 1962, "Three-dimensional geometry as carrier of information about time," *Phys. Rev. 126,* 1864–1865. [§§21.9, 43.2]

Bailey, J. *See* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Bailey, J., W. Bartl, G. von Bochmann, R. C. A. Brown, F. J. M. Farley, H. Jostlein, E. Picasso, and R. W. Williams, 1968, "Precision measurement of the anomalous magnetic moment of the muon," *Phys. Lett. 28B,* 287–289. [§44.2]

Bardeen, J. M., 1968, "General relativistic collapse of charged dust (abstract)," *Bull. Am. Phys. Soc. 13,* 41. [§34.6, Fig. 34.4]

Bardeen, J. M., 1970a, "Kerr metric black holes," *Nature 226,* 64–65. [§33.8, Boxes 33.3, 33.5]

Bardeen, J. M., 1970b, "A variational principle for rotating stars in general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 162,* 71–95. [Ex. 33.3]

Bardeen, J. M. *See also* Press and Bardeen 1971.

Bardeen, J. M., B. Carter, and S. W. Hawking, 1973, "The four laws of black-hole mechanics," *Commun. Math. Phys.,* in press. [Box 33.4]

Bardeen, J. M., and W. H. Press, 1972, "Radiation fields in the Schwarzschild background," *J. Math. Phys. 14,* 7–19. [§35.14, Ex. 32.11]

Bardeen, J. M., W. H. Press, and S. A. Teukolsky, 1972, "Rotating black holes: locally nonrotating frames, energy extraction, and scalar synchrotron radiation," *Astrophys. J. 178,* 347–369. [§33.7, Ex. 33.3, 33.14]

Bardeen, J. M., K. S. Thorne, and D. W. Meltzer, 1966, "A catalogue of methods for studying the normal modes of radial pulsation of general-relativistic stellar models," *Astrophys. J. 145,* 505–513. [Box 26.1]

Bardeen, J. M., and R. V. Wagoner, 1971, "Relativistic disks, I: Uniform rotation," *Astrophys. J. 167,* 359–423. [Box 24.1]

Barger, R. L. *See* Evenson *et. al.* 1972.

Bargmann, V., and E. P. Wigner, 1948, "Group theoretical discussion of relativistic wave equations," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 34,* 211–222. [Box 32.2]

Barnes, J. A., 1971, "A non-mathematical discussion of some basic concepts of precise time measurement," in *Tracor on Frequency 2,* No. 2 (Tracor Industrial Instruments, Austin, Texas). [Box 1.4]

Barschall, H. H. and W. Haeberli, 1971. "The Madison convention," pp. xxv–xxix in *Polarization Phenomena in Nuclear Reactions,* Univ. of Wisconsin Press, Madison. [§37.7]

Bartl, W. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968.

Barton, D., S. R. Bourne, and J. P. Fitch, 1970, "An algebra system," *Comput. J. 13,* 32–39. [Box 14.3]

Barton, D., and J. P. Fitch, 1971, "General relativity and the application of algebraic manipulative systems," *Comm. Assoc. Comput. Machinery 14,* 542–547. [Box 14.3]

Battelle Rencontres, Seattle 1967. *See* DeWitt and Wheeler 1968.

Baym, G., 1969, *Lectures on Quantum Mechanics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [Box 22.4]

Baym, G., H. A. Bethe, and C. J. Pethick, 1971, "Neutron star matter," *Nuclear Phys A. 175,* 225–271. [§24.2]

Bazin, M. *See* Adler, Bazin, and Schiffer 1965.

Beall, E. F., 1970, "Measuring the gravitational interaction of elementary particles," *Phys. Rev. D 1,* 961–978. [§1.3, Box 1.2]

Beams, J. W., 1971, "Finding a better value for G," *Phys. Today 24* (May 1971), 35–40. [§40.8]

Beams, J. W. *See also* Rose *et al.* 1969.

Beckedorff, D. L., and C. W. Misner, 1962, unpublished; see D. L. Beckedorff's A. B. Senior Thesis, Princeton University. [§32.4]

Bekenstein, J., 1972a, "Nonexistence of baryon number for static black holes," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 1239–1246. [Boxes 25.2, 32.2, 33.1]

Bekenstein, J., 1972b, "Nonexistence of baryon number for static black holes, II," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 2403–2412. [Boxes 25.2, 32.2, 33.1]

Bel, L., 1958, "Sur la radiation gravitationelle," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 247,* 1094–1096. [Ex. 15.2]

Bel, L., 1959, "Introduction d'un tenseur du quatrième ordre," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 248,* 1297–1300. [Ex. 15.2]

Bel, L., 1962, "La radiation gravitationelle," in CNRS 1962, pp. 119–126. [Ex. 15.2]

Belasco, E. P., and H. C. Ohanian, 1969, "Initial conditions in general relativity: Lapse and shift formulation," *J. Math. Phys. 10,* 1503–1507. [§21.9]

Belinfante, F., 1940, "On the current and the density of the electric charge, the energy, the linear momentum, and the angular momentum of arbitrary fields," *Physica 7,* 449–474. [§21.3]

Belinsky, V. A. *See also* Ryan 1972b.

Belinsky, V. A., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1969a, "On the nature of the singularities in the general solution of the gravitational equations," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 56,* 1700–1712. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 29,* 911–917. [§34.6]

Belinsky, V. A., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1969b, "General solution of the gravitational equations with a physical singularity," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 57,* 2163–2175. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 30,* 1174–1180 (1970). [§34.6]

Belinsky, V. A., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1970, "General solution of the gravitational equations with a physical oscillatory singularity," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 59,* 314–321. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 32,* 169–172. [§§30.6, 34.6]

Belinsky, V. A., I. M. Khalatnikov, and E. M. Lifshitz, 1970, "Oscillatory approach to a singular point in the relativistic cosmology," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk 102,* 463–500. English translation in *Advances in Physics 19,* 525–573. [§30.6, Box 30.1]

Belinsky, V. A., E. M. Lifshitz, and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1971, "Oscillatory mode of approach to a singularity in homogeneous cosmological models with rotating axes," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 60,* 1969–1979. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 33,* 1061–1066 (1971). [§§30.7, 34.6]

Bell, C. C., R. L. Forward, L. R. Miller, T. D. Beard, and T. M. Baran, 1969, "Static gravitational gradient field detection with a rotating torsional gradiometer," in NASL 1969. [Box 16.5]

Bell, C. C., R. L. Forward, and H. P. Williams, 1970, "Simulated terrain mapping with the rotating gravity gradiometer, in W. T. Kattner, ed., *Advances in Dynamic Gravimetry,* Instrument Society of America, Pittsburgh, 115–129. [Box 16.5]

Bell, S. J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hewish *et al.* 1968.

Beltran-Lopez, V. B. *See* Hughes, Robinson, and Beltran-Lopez 1960.

Bender, P. L., R. H. Dicke, D. T. Wilkinson, C. O. Alley, D. G. Currie, J. E. Faller, J. D. Mulholland, E. C. Silverberg, H. E. Plotkin, W. M. Kaulla, and G. J. F. McDonald, 1971, "The lunar laser-ranging experiment," in Davies 1971. [§40.9]

Bennett, A. S., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Bentley, R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Berger, B. K., D. M. Chitre, V. E. Moncrief, and Y. Nutku, 1972, "Hamiltonian formulation of spherically symmetric gravitational fields," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 2467–2470. [§21.10]

Berger, M., 1966, "Sur les spectres d'une variété Riemannienne," *Acad. Sci Paris, Comptes Rendus 263,* 13–16. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Berger, M., P. Gauduchon, and E. Mazet, 1971, *Le Spectre d'une variété riemannienne,* Springer, Berlin and New York. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Bergmann, P. G., 1942, *Introduction to the Theory of Relativity,* Prentice-Hall, New York. [endpapers]

Bergmann, P. G., 1968, "Comments on the scalar-tensor theory," *Int. J. Theor. Phys. 1,* 25–36. [§38.2]

Bern, Switzerland, 1955, Jubilee of Relativity Theory, conference held July 11–16, 1955; *see* Mercier and Kervâire 1956.

Bernoulli, D., 1733, *Hydrodynamica,* chapter 10, Archives of Academy of Science, Leningrad; summarized in C. C. Gillispie, ed., *Dictionary of Scientific Biography,* Scribners, New York, vol. 2, 1970. [Box 44.5]

Bers, L., 1952, "Singularities of minimal surfaces," in *Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians, Cambridge, Mass., 1950,* American Mathematical Society, Providence, R.I. [§33.2]

Bers, L., *cited by name in* Box 8.5.

Bertotti, B., 1959, "Uniform electromagnetic field in the theory of general relativity," *Phys. Rev. 116,* 1331–1333. [Ex. 32.1]

Bertotti, B., ed., 1973, proceedings of Course 56 of the International School of Physics Enrico Fermi, dealing with experimental tests of relativistic gravitation theories, Academic Press, New York, in press.

Bertotti, B., D. R. Brill, and R. Krotkov, 1962, "Experiments on gravitation," in Witten 1962. [§38.5, Box 40.1]

Bessel, F. W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Bethe, H. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Baym, Bethe, and Pethick 1971.

Birkhoff, G. D., 1923, *Relativity and Modern Physics*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Mass. [§32.2]

Birkhoff, G. D., 1943, "Matter, electricity and gravitation in flat spacetime," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 29*, 231–239. [§39.1]

Bishop, R. L., and S. I. Goldberg, 1968, *Tensor Analysis on Manifolds*, Macmillan, New York. [Box 8.1, Ex. 21.8]

Bisnovatyi-Kogan, G. S., and K. S. Thorne, 1970, "Relativistic gas spheres and clusters of point masses with arbitrarily large central redshifts: Can they be stable?" *Astrophys. J. 160*, 875–885. [Ex. 25.28]

Bisnovatyi-Kogan, G. S., and Ya. B. Zel'dovich, 1969, "Models of clusters of point masses with great central redshift," *Astrofizika 5*, 223–234. English translation in *Astrophys. 5*, 105–109. [Ex. 25.28]

Blackman, R. B., and J. W. Tukey, 1959, *The Measurement of Power Spectra, from the Point of View of Communications Engineering*, Dover, New York. [§37.8]

Blake, W., *quoted at end of* Chapter 44

Blaton, J., 1950, "On a geometrical interpretation of energy and momentum conservation in atomic collisions and disintegration processes," *Kgl. Danske Videnskab. Sels., Mat.-fys. Medd. 24*, no. 20. [§2.10]

Blatt, J. M., and V. F. Weisskopf, 1952, *Theoretical Nuclear Physics*, Wiley, New York. [§37.7]

Blumenthal, L. M., 1953, *Theory and Applications of Distance Geometry*, Clarendon Press, Oxford, England. [Box 13.1]

Bochmann, G. von. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968.

Bogoliubov, N. N., and D. V. Shirkov, 1959, *Introduction to the Theory of Quantized Fields*, Interscience (now a division of Wiley), New York. [§43.3]

Bogorodskii, A. F., 1962, *Uravneniya Polya Einsteina i ikh Primeneniye v Astronomii* (*Einstein's Field Equations and Their Application in Astronomy*), Kiev Univ. Press, USSR. [Ex. 25.22]

Bohr, A., and B. R. Mottleson, 1969, *Nuclear Structure, Vol. I: Single-Particle Motion*, W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§23.4]

Bohr, N., 1918, "On the quantum theory of line spectra," *Mém. Acad. R. Sci. & Lett. Danemark 4*, no. 1, parts 1–2; part 1 reprinted in Van der Waerden 1967, pp. 95–137. [Box 17.1]

Bohr, N., *cited by name in* Preface, §§44.1, 44.5, Box 17.1

Bohr, N., and L. Rosenfeld, 1933, "Zur Frage der Messbarkeit der elektromagnetischen Feldgrössen," *Kgl. Danske Videnshab. Sels. Mat.-fys. Medd. 12*, no. 8. [§43.2]

Boissonade, J. F. *See* Westerman and Boissonade 1878.

Bolt, B. A., 1964, "Recent information of the earth's interior from studies of mantle waves and eigenvibrations," in Ahrens, Press, and Runcorn 1964, pp. 55–119. [Ex. 37.14]

Bolton, J. G., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Bondi, H., 1947, "Spherically Symmetrical Models in General Relativity," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 107*, 410–425. [§30.6]

Bondi, H., 1957, "Plane gravitational waves in general relativity," *Nature 179*, 1072–1073. [Ex. 18.5, Fig. 18.1]

Bondi, H., 1961, *Cosmology*, 2d ed., Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [Box 27.1]

Bondi, H., 1965, "Some special solutions of the Einstein equations," in Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965, pp. 375–459, esp. p. 431. [Ex. 18.5]

Bondi, H., *cited by name in* §21.10, Boxes 27.7, 34.2. *See also* Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965.

Bondi, H., and T. Gold, 1948, "The steady-state theory of the expanding universe," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 108*, 252–270. [§28.4]

Bondi, H., and W. H. McCrea, 1960, "Energy transfer by gravitation in Newtonian theory," *Proc. Cambridge Phil. Soc. 56*, 410–413. [Ex. 18.5]

Bondi, H., F. A. E. Pirani, and I. Robinson, 1959, "Gravitational waves in general relativity, III: Exact plane waves," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 251*, 519–533. [§35.9]

Boni, N., M. Russ, and D. H. Laurence, 1960, *A Bibliographical Check List and Index to the Published Writings of Albert Einstein*, Pageant Books, Paterson, N.J., cited in preface of present bibliography; based on earlier bibliography of M. C. Shields in Schilpp 1949.

Born, M., 1971, *The Born-Einstein letters: Correspondence Between Albert Einstein and Max and Hedwig Born from 1916 to 1955 with Commentaries by Max Born*, translated by Irene Born, Walker, New York. [Box 1.11]

Born, M., *cited by name in* Box 17.2

Boughn, S. P., D. M. Fram, and R. B. Partridge, 1971, "Isotropy of the microwave background at 8-millimeter wavelength," *Astrophys. J. 165*, 439–444. [§§27.1, 27.2, 30.8]

Bourbaki, N., *cited by name in* Box 8.2; pseudonym for an organization of French mathematicians who, since 1939, have nearly completed the first ten *Books* of a projected larger work: *Éléments de Mathématique*, Hermann, Paris.

Bourne, S. R. *See* Barton, Bourne, and Fitch 1970.

Boyer, R. H., and R. W. Lindquist, 1967, "Maximal analytic extension of the Kerr metric," *J. Math. Phys. 8*, 265–281. [§33.2, Box 33.2, Ex. 33.8]

Braginsky, V. B., 1965, "Gravitational radiation and the prospect of its experimental discovery," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk 86*, 433–446. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—Uspekhi 8*, 513–521. [Box 36.3]

Braginsky, V. B., 1970, *Fizicheskie Eksperimenti s Probnimi Telami* (*Physics Experiments With Test Bodies*), Nauka, Moscow, Russia. English translation published as NASA-TT F-762, available from National Technical Information Service, Springfield, Va. [§37.8]

Braginsky, V. B., A. B. Manukin, and M. Yu. Tikhonov, 1970, "Investigation of dissipative ponderomotive effects of electromagnetic radiation," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 58*, 1549–1552, English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 31*, 829–830. [§37.8]

Braginsky, V. B., and M. B. Menskii, 1971, "High-frequency detection of gravitational waves," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. Pis'ma 13*, 585. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 13*, 417–419. [§37.9, Box 37.6]

Braginsky, V. B., and V. S. Nazarenko, 1971, "On the detection of gravitational radiation from some astronomical sources with the heterodyne detector," in Davies 1971, pp. 45–46. [§37.3]

Braginsky, V. B., and V. I. Panov, 1971, "Verification of the equivalence of inertial and gravitational mass," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 61,* 873–879. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 34,* 464–466. [§§38.3, 40.9, Box 1.2]

Braginsky, V. B., Ya. B. Zel'dovich, and V. N. Rudenko, 1969, "Reception of gravitational radiation of extraterrestrial origin," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. Pis'ma 10,* 437–441. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 10,* 280–283. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]

Brandeis Summer Institute in Theoretical Physics: 1964, *see* Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965; 1968, *see* Chrétian, Deser, and Goldstein 1969.

Brans, C., *cited by name in* §§40.1, 40.6, 40.9.

Brans, C., and R. H. Dicke, 1961, "Mach's principle and a relativistic theory of gravitation," *Phys. Rev. 124,* 925–935. Reprinted in Dicke 1964b. [§§17.6, 28.4, 38.2, 39.2, 40.8, Boxes 38.3, 39.1]

Brasseur, Georges, *quoted in* Fig. 44.5.

Brault, J. W., 1962, *The Gravitational Redshift in the Solar Spectrum,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton Univ. Abstract, "Gravitational Redshift of Solar Lines," in *Bull. Amer. Phys. Soc. 8,* 28 (1963). [§38.5, Fig. 38.2]

Brehme, R. W. *See* DeWitt and Brehme 1960.

Bressanone, Italy: 1970 summer school sponsored by Centro Interzionale Matematico Estivo. *See* Cattaneo 1971.

Brill, D. R., 1959, "On the positive definite mass of the Bondi-Weber-Wheeler time-symmetric gravitational waves," *Ann. Phys.* (*USA*) *7,* 466–483. [§21.10]

Brill, D. R., 1961, *General Relativity: Selected Topics of Current Interest,* report SUI61-4, Physics Department, State University of Iowa, Iowa City, Iowa (multilithed); summarized in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964b, pp. 431–432; published as Brill 1964. [§21.10]

Brill, D. R., 1964, "General relativity: selected topics of current interest," *Suppl. Nuovo Cimento 2,* 1–56. *See* Brill 1961.

Brill, D. R. *See also* Bertotti, Brill, and Krotkov 1962, Cohen and Brill 1967 *and* 1968, *and* Graves and Brill 1960.

Brill, D. R., P. L. Chrzanowski, C. M. Pereira, E. D. Fackerell, and J. R. Ipser, 1972, "Solution of the scalar wave equation in a Kerr background by separation of variables," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 1913–1915. [Ex. 33.14]

Brill, D. R., and J. M. Cohen, 1966, "Rotating masses and their effect on inertial frames," *Phys. Rev. 143,* 1011–1015. [§§21.12, 40.7, Ex. 26.1]

Brill, D. R., and J. B. Hartle, 1964, "Method of self-consistent field in general relativity and its application to the gravitational geon," *Phys. Rev. B 135,* 271–278. [§§21.12, 35.13]

Brill, D. R., and J. A. Wheeler, 1957, "Interaction of neutrinos and gravitational fields," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 29,* 465–479. [§§27.10, 41.11]

Brillouin, L., 1970, *Relativity Reexamined,* Academic Press, New York. [Ex. 25.21]

Brodetsky, S. *See* Dobson and Brodetsky 1947.

Brodsky, S. J., and S. D. Drell, 1970, "The present status of quantum electrodynamics," in *Ann. Rev. Nuclear Sci. 20,* 147–194. [§44.2]

Bromberg, V. A., 1958, "Relativistic corrections in the theory of the motion of the moon," *Bull. Inst. Theor. Astron., Akad. Nauk SSSR 6,* 733–756. [§40.6]

Bronshtein, M. P., *cited by name in* §29.2.

Brown, E. H., Jr. *See* Anderson, Brown, and Peterson 1966a *and* 1966b.

Brown, R. C. A. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968 *and* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Bruhat, Y., 1962, "The Cauchy problem," in Witten 1962. [§§21.11, 21.13]

Bruhat, Y. *See also* Choquet-Bruhat, Y., and Fourès-Bruhat, Y.

Bruno, G. *See* Singer 1950.

Bunsen, R. W., *cited by name in* Box 38.2.

Burbidge, E. M., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Burbidge and Burbidge 1969a *and* 1969b *and* Hoyle *et al.* 1964.

Burbidge, G. R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hoyle *et al.* 1964.

Burbidge, G. R., and E. M. Burbidge, 1969a, "Red-shifts of quasi-stellar objects and related extragalactic systems," *Nature 222,* 735–741. [Ex. 27.14]

Burbidge, G. R., and E. M. Burbidge, 1969b, "Quasi-stellar objects—a progress report," *Nature 224,* 21–24. [Ex. 27.14]

Burke, W. L., 1970, "Runaway solutions: remarks on the asymptotic theory of radiation damping," *Phys. Rev. A 2,* 1501–1505. [§20.6]

Burke, W. L., 1971, "Gravitational radiation damping of slowly moving systems calculated using matched asymptotic expansions," *J. Math. Phys. 12,* 402–418. [§36.8]

Burke, W. L., *cited by name in* §22.5.

Burnett, D. S. *See* Wasserburg and Burnett 1968.

Cairns, S. S., ed., 1965, *Differential and Combinatorial Topology,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J.

Cairns, S. S. *See also* Morse and Cairns 1969.

Callaway, J., 1953, "The equations of motion in Einstein's new unified field theory," *Phys. Rev. 92,* 1567–1570. [§20.6]

Callippus, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Caltech-JPL conference on experimental tests of gravitational theories, November 1970. *See* Davies 1971.

Cameron, A. G. W., 1970, "Neutron stars," *Ann. Rev. Astron. & Astrophys. 8,* 179–208. [§24.2]

Cameron, A. G. W., *See also* Langer and Cameron 1969, *and* Truran and Cameron 1971.

Cameron, A. G. W., and J. Truran, 1971, *work cited by* Peebles 1971. [Box 33.3]

Campbell, D. B. *See* Shapiro, Ash, *et al.* 1971 *and* Shapiro *et al.* 1972.

Campbell, L., and Garnett, W., 1882, *Life of James Clerk Maxwell,* Macmillan, London. [Box 4.6]

Campbell, W. W., and R. J. Trumpler, 1928, "Observations made with a pair of five-foot cameras on the light-deflections in the sun's gravitational field at the total solar eclipse of September 21, 1922." *Lick Obs. Bull. 13,* 130–160. [Box 40.1]

Carmeli, M., S. I. Fickler, and L. Witten, 1970, *Relativity,* Plenum, New York. [§40.7]

Carroll, L. *See* Dodgson, C. L.

Cartan, É., 1901, "Sur quelques quadratures dont l'élément différentiel contient des fonctions arbitraires," *Bull. Soc. Math. France 29,* 118–130. [Box 8.2]

Cartan, É., 1922a, "Sur les équations de la gravitation de Einstein," *J. Math. Pures Appl. 1,* 141-203. [§21.1]

Cartan, É., 1922b, "Sur une généralisation de la notion de courbure de Riemann et les espaces à torsion," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 174,* 593-595. [§§38.2, 39.2]

Cartan, É., 1923, "Sur les variétés à connexion affine et la théorie de la relativité generalisée (premiére partie)," *Ann. École Norm. Sup. 40,* 325-412. [§§8.2, 12.1, 12.2, 38.2, 39.2]

Cartan, É., 1924, "Sur les variétés à connexion affine et la théorie de la relativité generalisée (suite)," *Ann. École Norm. Sup. 41,* 1-25. [§§8.2, 8.3, 12.1]

Cartan, É., 1925, *La Géométrie des Espaces de Riemann,* Memorial des Sciences Mathématiques, Fascicule IX, Gauthier-Villars, Paris, France. [§14.5]

Cartan, É., 1928 and 1946, *Leçons sur la Géométrie des Espaces de Riemann,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, France. [§§14.5, 15.3, Box 8.2, Ex. 21.4, endpapers]

Cartan, É., 1935, *La Méthode du Repère Mobile, la Théorie des Groupes Continus et les Espaces Generalisées,* Hermann, Paris, France. [§6.4]

Cartan, É., 1945, "Les systèmes différentiels extérieurs et leurs applications géométriques," *Exposés de Géométrie 14,* Hermann, Paris, France. [§4.1]

Cartan, É., 1946. *See* Cartan 1928.

Cartan, É., 1966, *Theory of Spinors,* M.I.T. Press, Cambridge, Mass. [§41.11]

Cartan, É., *cited by name in* §§9.1, 13.1, 13.4, 15.1, Boxes 10.1, 12.3, Ex. 12.7, 12.8.

Cartan, H., 1970, *Formes Différentiels,* Hermann, Paris, France. [§4.1]

Carter, B., 1966a, "Complete analytic extension of the symmetry axis of Kerr's solution of Einstein's equations," *Phys. Rev. 141,* 1242-1247. [Box 33.2]

Carter, B., 1966b, "The complete analytic extension of the Reissner-Nordstrom metric in the special case $e^2 = m^2$," *Phys. Lett. 21,* 423-424. [Fig. 34.4, Ex. 31.8, 34.3]

Carter, B., 1968a, "Global structure of the Kerr family of gravitational fields," *Phys. Rev. 174,* 1559-1571. [§33.5, Box 33.2, Ex. 33.7]

Carter, B., 1968b, "Large numbers in astrophysics and cosmology," unpublished preprint, Institute of Theoretical Astronomy, Cambridge, Eng. [§44.6]

Carter, B., 1968c, "Hamilton-Jacobi and Schrodinger separable solutions of Einstein's equations," *Commun. Math. Phys. 10,* 280-310. [§33.5]

Carter, B., 1970, "An axisymmetric black hole has only two degrees of freedom," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 26,* 331-333. [Box 33.1]

Carter, B., 1973, "Properties of the Kerr metric," *in* DeWitt and DeWitt 1973. [Box 33.1]

Carter, B., *cited by name in* Box 34.3. *See also* Bardeen, Carter, and Hawking 1973.

Cattaneo, C., ed., 1971, *Relativistic Fluid Dynamics,* proceedings of a summer school sponsored by Centro Internazionale Matematico Estivo, Bressanone, Italy, June 1970, Edizione Cremonese, Rome. [§22.3]

Cattaneo, C., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Cauchy, A. L., *cited by name in* Box 17.2.

Cavendish, H., 1798, "Experiments to determine the density of the Earth" (read June 21, 1798), *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. London, Part II* (1798), pp. 469-526. [§40.8]

Caves, C. M., *cited by name in* §26.1.

Chadwick, J., 1932, "Possible existence of a neutron," *Nature 129,* 312. [Box 24.1]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1931a, "The density of white dwarf stars," *Phil. Mag. 11,* 592-596. [Box 24.1]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1931b, "The maximum mass of ideal white dwarfs," *Astrophys. J. 74,* 81-82. [Box 24.1]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1964a. "Dynamical instability of gaseous masses approaching the Schwarzschild limit in general relativity," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 12,* 114-116 and 437-438. [§26.1, Boxes 24.1, 26.2]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1964b, "The dynamical instability of gaseous masses approaching the Schwarzschild limit in general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 140,* 417-433. [§26.1, Boxes 24.1, 26.2]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1965a, "The post-Newtonian equations of hydrodynamics in general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 1488-1512. [§39.3, Box 39.3, Ex. 39.14]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1965b, "The post-Newtonian effects of general relativity on the equilibrium of uniformly rotating bodies, I: The Maclaurin spheroids and the virial theorem," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 1513-1518. [§39.3, Box 39.3]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1965c, "The stability of gaseous masses for radial and non-radial oscillations in the post-Newtonian approximation of general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 1519-1540. [§39.3, Box 26.2]

Chandrasekhar, S., 1968, *Hydrodynamic and Hydromagnetic Stability,* Clarendon Press, Oxford. See especially §108. [Box 32.3]

Chandrasekhar, S., and G. Contopolous, 1967, "On a post-Galilean transformation appropriate to the post-Newtonian theory of Einstein, Infeld, and Hoffmann," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 298,* 123-141. [§39.3, 39.9]

Chandrasekhar, S., and F. P. Esposito, 1970, "The $2\frac{1}{2}$-post-Newtonian equations of hydrodynamics and radiation reaction in general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 160,* 153-180. [§36.8, Box 39.3]

Chandrasekhar, S., and N. R. Lebovitz, 1968, "The pulsations and the dynamical stability of gaseous masses in uniform rotation," *Astrophys. J., 152,* 267-291. [Ex. 39.7]

Chandrasekhar, S., and Y. Nutku, 1969, "The second post-Newtonian equations of hydrodynamics in general relativity," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 55-80. [Box 39.3]

Chapel Hill 1957, Conference on the Role of Gravitation in Physics, Jan. 18-23, 1957. *See* DeWitt 1957.

Chase, D. M., 1954, "The equations of motion of charged test particles in general relativity," *Phys. Rev. 95,* 243-246. [§20.6]

Cherlin, G., *cited by name in introduction to this bibliography.*

Chern, S.-S., 1955, "On curvature and characteristic classes of a Riemann manifold," *Hamburg Abh. 20,* 117-126. [Box 15.3]

Chern, S.-S., 1960, *Geometric Structures on Manifolds,* colloquium lectures, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, R.I. [§2.2]

Chern, S.-S., 1962, "Geometry of a quadratic differential form," *J. Soc. Indust. & Appl. Math. 10,* 751–755, also in *H. P. Robertson January 27, 1903–August 26, 1961, In Memoriam,* Soc. Indust. and Applied Math., Philadelphia 1963, pp. 13–17. [Box 15.3]

Chern, S.-S., 1966, "The geometry of G-structures," *Bull. Am. Math. Soc. 72,* 167–219. [§2.2]

Chern, S.-S., 1971, "Differential geometry: its past and its future," in *Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians, Nice, September 1970,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, pp. 41–53. [§2.2]

Chern, S.-S., and C. Chevalley, 1952, "Élie Cartan and his mathematical work," *Bull. Am. Math. Soc. 58,* 217–250. [Box 8.2]

Chevalley, C. *See* Chern and Chevalley 1952.

Chick, H. J., 1960, *Theory of Gravitation 1920–Present* (*Bibliography*), Report LMS-2328 of Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory, Los Alamos, New Mexico, cited in preface of present bibliography.

Chick, H. J., 1964, *Theory of Gravitation 1959–1963* (*Bibliography*), Report LMS-3099 of Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory, Los Alamos, New Mexico, cited in preface of present bibliography.

Chinnapared, R. *See* Newman *et al.* 1965.

Chitre, D. M., 1972a, *Investigations of the Vanishing of a Horizon for Bianchi Type IX* (*Mixmaster*) *Universe,* doctoral dissertation, Univ. of Maryland. [§30.8]

Chitre, D. M., 1972b, "High-frequency sound waves to eliminate a horizon in the mixmaster universe," *Phys. Rev. D 6,* 3390–3396. [§30.8]

Chitre, D. M. *See also* Berger *et al.* 1972.

Chiu, H.-Y., and W. F. Hoffman, eds., 1964, *Gravitation and Relativity,* W. A. Benjamin, New York.

Choquard, P., 1955, "Traitement semi-classique des forces générales dans la représentation de Feynman," *Helv. Phys. Acta 28,* 89–157. [Box 21.1, Fig. 13.2]

Choquet-Bruhat, Y., 1968a, *Géométrie différentielle et systèmes extérieurs,* Monographies Universitaires de Mathématiques no. 28, Dunod, Paris, France. [§4.1]

Choquet-Bruhat, Y., 1968b, "Espace-temps Einsteiniens généraux, chocs gravitationels," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré 8,* 327–338. [§21.13]

Choquet-Bruhat, Y., 1969, "Construction de solutions radiatives approchées des équations d'Einstein," *Commun. Math. Phys. 12,* 16–35. [§35.13]

Choquet-Bruhat, Y., 1972, "Problème des contraintes sur une variété compacte," *Acad. Sci. Paris, Comptes Rend. A 274,* 682–684; fuller account in "Global solutions of the equations of constraint in general relativity, on open and closed manifolds," *Gen. Rel. & Grav.* 1973, in press. [§21.1]

Choquet-Bruhat, Y. *See also* Bruhat, Y., *and* Fourès-Bruhat, Y.

Chrétien, M., S. Deser, and J. Goldstein, eds., 1969, *Brandeis Summer Institute 1968, Astrophysics and General Relativity,* Gordon and Breach, New York.

Christodolou, D., 1970, "Reversible and irreversible transformations in black-hole physics," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 25,* 1596–1597. [§33.8, Box 33.4]

Christodolou, D., 1971, *Investigations in Gravitational Collapse and the Physics of Black Holes,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton Univ. [§35.8, Boxes 33.3, 33.4, Fig. 33.3]

Christodolou, D., and R. Ruffini, 1971, "Reversible transformations of a charged black hole," *Phys. Rev. D 4,* 3552–3555. [§33.8, Boxes 33.4, 33.5]

Chrzanowski, P. L., and C. W. Misner, 1973, "Geodesic synchrotron radiation in the Kerr geometry by the method of asymptotically factorized Green's functions," technical report of the Dept. of Physics and Astronomy, University of Maryland. [§33.8]

Chrzanowski, P. L. *See also* Brill *et al.* 1972.

Cincinnati 1969, Relativity Conference in The Midwest, June 2–6, 1969, Cincinnati, Ohio. *See* Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970.

Clark, G. *See* Eddington and Clark 1938.

Clarke, C. J. S., 1970, "On the global isometric embedding of pseudo-Riemannian manifolds," *Proc. Roy. Soc. London A 314,* 417–428. [§23.8]

Clayton, D., 1968, *Principles of Stellar Evolution and Nucleosynthesis,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [§28.1]

Clemence, G. M., 1943, "The motion of Mercury, 1765–1937," *Astron. Papers Am. Ephemeris 11,* 1–221. [Box 40.3]

Clemence, G. M., 1947, "The relativity effect in planetary motions," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 19,* 361–364. [Box 40.3]

Clemens, R. *See also* Fletcher *et al.* 1967.

Clemens, R., and R. Matzner, 1967, Technical Report no. 635 of the Univ. of Maryland Department of Physics and Astronomy. [Box 14.3]

Clifford, W. K., 1879, *Lectures and Essays,* L. Stephen and F. Pollock, eds., Macmillan, London, I, 244 and 322. [§44.3]

Clifford, W. K., 1882, *Mathematical Papers,* R. Tucker, ed., Macmillan, London. [§44.3]

CNRS, 1962, *Les Théories relativistes de la gravitation,* Éditions du Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique, Paris, France. *Same as* Royaumont 1959.

Cocke, W. J., 1965, "A maximum-entropy principle in general relativity and the stability of fluid spheres," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré A 2,* 283–306. [§26.1]

Cocke, W. J., H. J. Disney and D. J. Taylor, 1969, "Discovery of optical signals from pulsar NP0532," *Nature 221,* 525–527. [Box 24.1]

Codazzi, D., *cited by name in* §21.5.

Cohen, J. M., 1968, "Angular momentum and the Kerr metric," *J. Math. Phys. 9,* 905–906. [Ex. 26.1]

Cohen, J. M. *See also* Brill and Cohen 1966.

Cohen, J. M., and D. Brill, 1966, "Rotating masses and their effect on inertial frames," *Phys. Rev. 143,* 1011–1015. [§21.12]

Cohen, J. M., and D. R. Brill, 1968, "Further examples of 'Machian effects' of rotating bodies in general relativity," *Nuovo Cim. 56B,* 209–219. [Ex. 26.1]

Cohen, J. M., and R. M. Wald, 1971, "Point charge in the vicinity of a Schwarzschild black hole," *J. Math. Phys. 12,* 1845–1849. [Box 33.1]

Cohen, P., 1966, *Set Theory and the Continuum Hypothesis,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [Box 44.5]

Cole, J., 1968, *Perturbation Methods in Applied Mathematics,* Ginn-Blaisdell, Waltham, Mass. [§22.5]

Coleman, C. J., 1971, "A simple relativistic theory of gravitation," *J. Phys. A 4,* 611–616. [§40.5]

Coleman, J. A., 1967, *Early Theories of the Universe,* New American Library, New York. [§1.7]

Colgate, S. A., 1967, "Stellar coalescence and the multiple-supernova interpretation of quasi-stellar sources," *Astrophys. J. 150,* 163–192. [§24.5, Box 33.3]

Colgate, S. A., and R. H. White, 1966, "The hydrodynamic behavior of supernovae explosions," *Astrophys. J. 143,* 626–681. [§32.7]

Collins, C. B., and S. W. Hawking, 1973, "Why is the universe isotropic?" *Astrophys. J. 180,* 317–334. [Box 34.3]

Collins, R. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hewish *et al.* 1968.

Combridge, J. T., 1965, *Bibliography of Relativity and Gravitation Theory 1921–1937,* Kings College, London, cited in preface of present bibliography.

Comte, A., 1835, *Cours de philosophie positive,* Paris. [Box 27.7].

Conklin, E. K., 1969, "Velocity of the Earth with respect to the cosmic background radiation," *Nature 222,* 971–972. [§30.8]

Contopolous, G. *See* Chandrasekhar and Contopolous 1967.

Coote, N., *cited by name in introduction to this bibliography.*

Copenhagen 1971, Sixth International Conference on General Relativity and Gravitation, held in Copenhagen, July 1971; portions of the proceedings appear as articles in *Gen. Rel. Grav.,* especially vol. 3, 1972.

Copernicus, N. *See* Dobson and Brodetsky 1947.

Corben, H. C., and P. Stehle, 1960, *Classical Mechanics,* 2d ed., Wiley, New York. [Ex. 33.7]

Cornell University, 1965, Summer Seminar on Applied Mathematics, arranged by the American Mathematical Society. Proceedings (vols. 8–10 in Lectures in Applied Mathematics series) published as Ehlers 1967.

Cornford, F. M., 1937, *Plato's Cosmology: The Timaeus of Plato,* Humanities Press, New York. [Box 27.7]

Corson, E. M., 1953, *Introduction to Tensors, Spinors, and Relativistic Wave-Equations,* Hafner, New York. [§21.3]

Couch, W. E. *See also* Newman *et al.* 1965.

Couch, W. E., and E. T. Newman, 1972, "Generalized Lienard-Wiechart fields," *J. Math. Phys. 13,* 929–931. [§36.1]

Couch, W. E., R. J. Torrence, A. I. Janis, and E. T. Newman, 1968, "Tail of a gravitational wave," *J. Math. Phys. 9,* 484–496. [§§35.8, 35.14]

Courant, R., 1937, "Plateau's problem and Dirichlet's principle," *Ann. Math. U.S. 38,* 679–724. [§33.2]

Coxeter, H. S. M., 1963, *Regular Polytopes,* 2d ed., Macmillan, New York. [§42.5, Box 27.2]

Curott, D. R., 1966, "Earth deceleration from ancient solar eclipses," *Astron. J. 71,* 264–269. [Fig. 1.8]

Currie, D. G., *cited by name in* Fig. 40.4. *See also* Bender *et al.* 1971.

Curtis, H. D., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Cusanus, N. *See* Heron 1954.

Dabbs, J. W. T., J. A. Harvey, D. Paya, and H. Horstmann, 1965, "Gravitational acceleration of free neutrons," *Phys. Rev. B 139,* 756–760. [§1.3]

D'Alembert, J., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Danielson, B. L. *See* Evenson *et al.* 1972.

Dante Alighieri, *Paradiso,* translated by Philip H. Wicksteed, 1921, Dent, London, England. [Epigraph to Chap. 44]

Danziger, I. J., 1970, "The cosmic abundance of helium," *Ann. Rev. Astron. Astrophys., 8,* 161–178. [§28.1]

Darboux, G., 1941, *Leçons sur la Théorie Générale des Surfaces, Part I,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, France. [§33.2]

Darmois, G., 1927, *Les équations de la gravitation einsteinienne,* Mémorial des sciences mathematiques XXV, Gauthier-Villars, Paris. [§21.13]

Darwin, C., 1959, "The gravity field of a particle, I," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 249,* 180–194. [§25.5, Fig. 25.7]

Darwin, C., 1961, "The gravity field of a particle, II," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 263,* 39–50. [§25.5, Fig. 25.7]

Datt, B., 1938, "Über eine Klasse von Lösungen der Gravitationsgleichungen der Relativität," *Z. Physik 108,* 314–321. [§30.6, Ex. 32.8]

Davenport, W. B., and W. L. Root, 1958, *An Introduction to the Theory of Random Signals and Noise.* McGraw Hill, New York, [§37.8]

Davies, R. W., ed., 1971, *Proceedings of the Conference on Experimental Tests of Gravitational Theories, November 11–13, 1970, California Institute of Technology,* J.P.L. Technical Memorandum, 33–499.

Davis, M., R. Ruffini, W. H. Press, and R. H. Price, 1971, "Gravitational radiation from a particle falling radially into a Schwarzschild black hole," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 27,* 1466–1469. [§§33.7, 36.5, Box 33.3, Fig. 36.2]

Davis, W. R., 1970, *Classical Theory of Particles and Fields and the Theory of Relativity,* Gordon and Breach, New York. [§21.3, endpapers]

Day, G. W. *See* Evenson *et al.* 1972.

de Broglie, M. *See* Einstein 1912.

Debye, P. J. W., *cited by name in* §22.5.

De Chéseaux, P. L., 1744, *Traité de la comète qui a paru en décembre 1743,* Paris; the relevant material is in the Appendix. [Box 27.7]

De Felice, F., 1968, "Equatorial geodesic motion in the gravitational field of a rotating source," *Nuovo Cimento B 57,* 351–388. [Box 33.5]

Defoe, D., 1722, *The Fortunes and Misfortunes of the Famous Moll Flanders,* reprinted by Fine Editions Press, Cleveland, 1953. [epigraph to Part X]

De Groot, S. R. *See* Kluitenberg and de Groot 1954.

De Hoffmann, F., and E. Teller, 1950, "Magneto-hydrodynamic shocks," *Phys. Rev. 80,* 692–703. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

De la Cruz, V., and W. Israel, 1967, "Gravitational bounce," *Nuovo Cimento A 51,* 744–760. [§34.6, Fig. 34.4]

De Lange, F. G. *See* Refsdal, Stabell, and de Lange 1967.

Dempster, J. R. H., 1963, *Feynman Quantization in Field Theory: Topology of Commutators and Functional Representation of States,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University. [Box 21.1]

De Rham, G., 1955, *Variétés Différentiables,* Herman, Paris. [§§4.1, 22.4]

Deser, S., 1970, "Self-interaction and gauge invariance," *Gen. Rel. & Grav. 1,* 9–18. [§§7.1, 18.1, Box 17.2 part 5]

Deser, S., *cited by name in* §§21.1, 35.8, Box 17.2, part 2′. *See also* Arnowitt, Deser, and Misner 1962 *and* Chrétien, Deser, and Goldstein 1969.

Deser, S., and K. W. Ford, eds., 1965, *Lectures on General Relativity; 1964 Brandeis Summer Institute in Theoretical Physics I,* Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N.J. *Same as* Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965.

De Sitter, W., 1916, "On Einstein's theory of gravitation and its astronomical consequences," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 77,* 155–184 and 481. [§§40.6, 40.7]

De Sitter, W., 1917a, "On the relativity of inertia: Remarks concerning Einstein's latest hypothesis," *Proc. Kon. Ned. Akad. Wet. 19,* 1217–1225. [§27.11]

De Sitter, W., 1917b, "On the curvature of space," *Proc. Kon. Ned. Akad. Wet. 20,* 229–243. [§27.11]

De Sitter, W., *cited by name in* §30.3, Box 27.7.

Deutsch, A. J., and W. B. Klemperer, eds., 1962, *Space Age Astronomy,* Academic Press, New York.

De Valera, E., *cited by name in* §41.1.

De Vaucouleurs, G., 1971, "The large-scale distribution of galaxies and clusters of galaxies," *Astron. Soc. Pacific Publ. 83,* 113–143. [§27.11]

DeWitt, B. S., 1953, "Pair production by a curved metric," *Phys. Rev. 90,* 357. [§30.5]

DeWitt, B. S., 1962, "The quantization of geometry," in Witten 1962. [Ex. 40.8]

DeWitt, B. S., 1967a, "Quantum theory of gravity, I," *Phys. Rev. 160,* 1113–1148. [§§21.1, 43.1, 43.3]

DeWitt, B. S., 1967b. "Quantum theory of gravity, II; The manifestly covariant theory." *Phys. Rev. 162,* 1195–1239. [§§43.1, 43.3]

DeWitt, B. S., 1967c, "Quantum theory of gravity, III; Application of the covariant theory," *Phys. Rev. 162,* 1239–1256. [Box 17.2 part 6h]

DeWitt, B. S., 1971, *Lectures on Relativity—Stanford, Fall 1971* (unpublished manuscript). [§36.7]

DeWitt, B. S., *cited by name in* Ex. 35.20. *See also* DeWitt and DeWitt 1964a, 1964b, and 1973.

DeWitt, B. S., and R. W. Brehme, 1960, "Radiation damping in a gravitational field," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 9,* 220–259. [§35.8, Ex. 35.14]

DeWitt, C., ed. 1957, *Conference on the Role of Gravitation in Physics, Proceedings,* W.A.D.C. Technical Report 57-216; ASTIA Document No. AD118180, Wright Air Development Center, Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio.

DeWitt, C. *See also* Morette, C.

DeWitt, C., and B. S. DeWitt, 1964a, "Falling charges," *Physics 1,* 3–20. [§35.8]

DeWitt, C., and B. S. DeWitt, eds., 1964b, *Relativity, Groups, and Topology,* Gordon and Breach, New York. [§38.2]

DeWitt, C., and B. S. DeWitt, eds., 1973, *Black Holes,* Proceedings of 1972 session of Ecole d'été de physique theorique, Gordon and Breach, New York. [§33.1]

DeWitt, C., E. Schatzman, and P. Veron, eds., 1967, *High-Energy Astrophysics, Vol. III,* Gordon and Breach, New York. [§24.4]

DeWitt, C., and J. A. Wheeler, eds., 1968, *Battelle Rencontres: 1967 Lectures in Mathematics and Physics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York.

Dicke, R. H., 1954, "Coherence in spontaneous radiation processes," *Phys. Rev. 93,* 99–110. [Box 38.3]

Dicke, R. H., 1957, "Coherence and the quantum," *J. Opt. Soc. Am. 47,* 527. [Box 38.3]

Dicke, R. H., 1959a, "Dirac's cosmology and the dating of meteorites," *Nature 183,* 170–171. [§38.6]

Dicke, R. H., 1959b, "New research on old gravitation," *Science 129,* 621–624. [§§38.6, 40.9, 44.6]

Dicke, R. H., 1961, "Dirac's cosmology and Mach's principle," *Nature 192,* 440–441. [§§38.6, 44.6, Box 38.3]

Dicke, R. H., 1962, "Mach's principle and invariance under transformation of units," *Phys. Rev. 125,* 2163–2167. Reprinted in Dicke 1964b. [Box 39.1]

Dicke, R. H., 1964a, "The sun's rotation and relativity," *Nature 202,* 432–435. [Box 38.3]

Dicke, R. H., 1964b, *The Theoretical Significance of Experimental Relativity,* Gordon and Breach, New York; also in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964a. [§§38.2, 38.7, 44.6, Box 40.1]

Dicke, R. H., 1964c, "Remarks on the observational basis of general relativity," in Chiu and Hoffman 1964, pp. 1–16. [§40.9]

Dicke, R. H., 1968, "Scalar-tensor gravitation and the cosmic fireball," *Astrophys. J., 152,* 1–24. [§28.4]

Dicke, R. H., 1969, *Gravitation and the Universe,* American Philosophical Society, Philadelphia. [§§38.6, 40.9]

Dicke, R. H., *cited by name in* §§10.1, 38.3, 38.5, 40.1, 40.6, 40.9, Box 27.7. *See also* Bender *et al.* 1971, Brans and Dicke 1961, *and* Roll, Krotkov, and Dicke 1964.

Dicke, R. H., and H. M. Goldenberg, 1967, "Solar oblateness and general relativity," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 18,* 313–316. [Boxes 38.3, 40.3]

Dicke, R. H., and P. J. E. Peebles, 1962a, "Significance of spatial isotropy," *Phys. Rev. 127,* 629–631. Reprinted in Dicke 1964b. [§38.7]

Dicke, R. H., and P. J. E. Peebles, 1962b, "Cosmology and the radioactive decay ages of terrestrial rocks and meteorites," *Phys. Rev. 128,* 2006–2011. [§38.6, Box 38.3]

Dicke, R. H., and P. J. E. Peebles, 1965, "Gravitation and space science," *Space Sci. Rev. 4,* 419–460. [§40.8]

Dicke, R. H., P. J. E. Peebles, P. G. Roll, and D. T. Wilkinson, 1965, "Cosmic-black-body radiation," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 414–419. [§§27.2, 28.1]

Dieter, N. H., E. E. Epstein, A. E. Lilley, and M. S. Roberts, 1962, "A radio and optical investigation of extragalactic redshifts," *Astron. J. 67,* 270–271. [§29.2]

Dieudonné, J., 1960, *Foundations of Modern Analysis,* Academic Press, New York. [§2.6]

Digges, T., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

d'Inverno, R. A., 1969, "ALAM—Atlas Lisp algebraic manipulator," *Comput. J. 12,* 124–127. [Box 14.3]

Dirac, P. A. M., 1926, "On the theory of quantum mechanics," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 112,* 661–677. [Box 24.1]

Dirac, P. A. M., 1936, "Relativistic wave equations," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 155,* 447–459. [Box 32.2]

Dirac, P. A. M., 1937, "The cosmological constants," *Nature 139,* 323. [§§38.6, 44.6]

Dirac, P. A. M., 1938, "New basis for cosmology," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 165,* 199–208. [§§38.6, 44.6]

Dirac, P. A. M., 1959, "Fixation of coordinates in the Hamiltonian theory of gravitation," *Phys. Rev. 114,* 924–930. [§21.7]

Dirac, P. A. M. 1964, *Lectures on Quantum Mechanics,* Belfer Graduate School of Science Monograph Series Number Two, Yeshiva University, New York. [§21.7]

Dirac, Paul A. M., *Festschrift* on the occasion of his 70th birthday, Aug. 8, 1972. *See* Salam and Wigner 1972.

Dirac, P. A. M., *cited by name in* §§20.6, 21.1, Box 4.4.

Dirac, P. A. M., V. A. Fock, and B. Podolsky, 1932, "On quantum electrodynamics," *Phys. Z. Sowjetunion 2,* 468–479. [§21.8]

Dobson, J. F., and S. Brodetsky, 1947, *Nicolaus Copernicus's De Revolutionibus* (translation of Preface and Book I), Royal Astronomical Society, London. [Box 27.7].

Dodgson, C. L., 1871, *Through the Looking Glass,* Macmillan, London. [Epigraph to Chap. 32]

Doroshkevich, A. G., 1966, "Change of the angular momentum of a star during accretion," *Astron. Zhur. 43,* 105–107. Terrible English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A. J. 10,* 83–84. [Box 33.3]

Doroshkevich, A. G., V. N. Lukash, and I. D. Novikov, 1971, "Impossibility of mixing in the Bianchi type IX cosmological model," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 60,* 1201–1205. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 33,* 649–651. [§30.8]

Doroshkevich, A. G., Ya. B. Zel'dovich, and I. D. Novikov, 1965, "Gravitational collapse of nonsymmetric and rotating masses," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 49,* 170–181. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 22,* 122–130. [Box 33.3, Ex. 26.1]

Douglas, K. N., I. Robinson, A. Schild, E. L. Schücking, J. A. Wheeler, and N. J. Woolf, eds., 1969, *Quasars and High-Energy Astronomy,* Proceedings of the Second Texas Symposium on Relativistic Astrophysics, Gordon and Breach, New York.

Douglass, D. H., Jr., 1971, "Properties of 'hollow square' gravitational wave detectors," in Davies 1971. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]

Douglass, D. H., Jr., *cited by name in* Ex. 37.13.

Douglass, D. H., Jr., and J. A. Tyson, 1971, "New class of gravitational-wave detectors," *Nature 229,* 34–36. [§37.3]

Drabkin, I. E., and S. Drake, 1960, *Galileo Galilei on Motion and on Mechanics,* translations with introductions and notes, University of Wisconsin Press, Madison, Wisc. [Box 1.2]

Drake, S. *See* Drabkin and Drake 1960.

Drell, S. D. *See* Brodsky and Drell 1970.

Drever, R. W., 1961, "A search for anisotropy of inertial mass using a free precession technique," *Phil. Mag. 6,* 683–687. [§38.7]

Dunford, N. and J. T. Schwartz, 1958, *Linear operators,* pp. 467–471, Interscience (now a division of Wiley), New York. *Cited under* Lefschetz 1949.

Durbin, R. P., H. H. Loar, and W. W. Havens, Jr., 1952, "The lifetimes of the pi-plus and pi-minus mesons," *Phys. Rev. 88,* 179–183. [§38.4]

Duyvendak, J. J. L., 1942, "Further data bearing on the identification of the Crab Nebula with the supernova of A.D. 1054, Part I: The ancient oriental chronicles," *Proc. Astron. Soc. Pacific 54,* 91–94. [Box 24.1]

Dyce, R. B. *See* Shapiro, Ash, *et al.* 1971 and Shapiro *et al.* 1972.

Dyson, F. J., 1954, *Advanced Quantum Mechanics,* multilithographed lecture notes, Physics Department, Cornell University. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Dyson, F. J., 1967, "Time variation of the charge of the proton," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 19,* 1291–1293. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]

Dyson, F. J., 1969, "Seismic response of the Earth to a gravitational wave in the 1-Hz band," *Astrophys. J. 156,* 529–540. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]

Dyson, F. J., 1972, "The fundamental constants and their time variation," in Salam and Wigner 1972. [§38.6]

Eardley, D., E. Liang, and R. Sachs, 1972, "Velocity-dominated singularities in irrotational dust cosmologies," *J. Math. Phys. 13,* 99–107. [§30.7]

Eckart, C., 1940, "The thermodynamics of irreversible processes, III: Relativistic theory of the simple fluid," *Phys. Rev., 58,* 919–924. [Ex. 22.7]

Ecphantus, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Eddington, A. S., 1922, *The Mathematical Theory of Relativity,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§§38.2, 39.3]

Eddington, A. S., 1924, "A comparison of Whitehead's and Einstein's formulas," *Nature 113,* 192. [Boxes 31.1, 31.2]

Eddington, A. S., 1931, "Preliminary note on the masses of the electron, the proton, and the universe," *Proc. Cambridge Phil. Soc. 27,* 15–19. [§44.6]

Eddington, A. S., 1936, *Relativity Theory of Protons and Electrons,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§44.6]

Eddington, A. S., 1946, *Fundamental Theory,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§44.6]

Eddington, A. S., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Eddington, A., and G. Clark, 1938, "The problem of *n* bodies in general relativity theory," *Proc. Roy. Soc. A 166,* 465–475. [Ex. 39.15]

Ehlers, J., 1961, "Contributions to the relativistic mechanics of continuous media," *Akad. Wiss. Lit. Mainz Abh. Math.-Nat. Kl.,* 793–837. [§22.3]

Ehlers, J., ed., 1967, *Relativity Theory and Astrophysics: I, Relativity and Cosmology; II, Galactic Structure; III, Stellar Structure,* American Mathematical Society, Providence, R.I.

Ehlers, J., 1971, "General relativity and kinetic theory," in Sachs 1971. [§22.6, Ex. 22.7, endpapers]

Ehlers, J. *See also* Jordan, Ehlers, and Sachs 1961.

Ehlers, J., P. Geren, and R. K. Sachs, 1968, "Isotropic solutions of the Einstein-Liouville equations," *J. Math. Phys. 9,* 1344–1349. [§27.2]

Ehlers, J., and W. Kundt, 1962, "Exact solutions of the gravitational field equations," in Witten 1962. [§§33.6, 35.9, Ex. 35.8, 35.9]

Ehlers, J., F. A. E. Pirani, and A. Schild, 1972, "The geometry of free-fall and light propagation," *in* O'Raifeartaigh 1972, pp. 63–84. [Boxes 10.2, 16.4]

Ehrenfest, P., 1916, "On the adiabatic changes of a system in connection with the quantum theory," *Amsterdam Acad., Proc. 19,* 576–597. [Box 22.4]

Einstein, A., 1905, "Zur elektrodynamik bewegter Körper," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 17,* 891–921. [Box 1.5]
Einstein, A., 1908, "Über das Relativitätsprinzip und die aus demselben gezogenen Folgerungen," *Jarb. Radioakt. 4,* 411–462. [§§7.4, 17.7]
Einstein, A., 1911, "Über den Einfluss der Schwerkraft auf die Ausbreitung des Lichtes," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 35,* 898–908, English translation in Lorentz *et al.* 1923. [§§1.3, 7.2, 7.4, 10.1, 16.2]
Einstein, A. 1912, "Si l'on modifie la longueur du pendule . . . ," p. 450 in P. Langevin and M. de Broglie, eds., *La théorie du rayonnement et les quanta,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, 1912. [Box 22.4]
Einstein, A., 1913a, "Zum gegenwärtigen Stand des Gravitationsproblems," *Phys. Z. 14,* 1249–1262, discussion 1262–1266. [Epigraph to Chap. 35]
Einstein, A., 1913b, letter to Ernst Mach dated June 26. [§21.12, Fig. 21.5]
Einstein, A., 1915a, "Zür allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.,* 778–786 (published November 11). [§17.7]
Einstein, A. 1915b, "Zür allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie (Nachtrag)," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.,* 799–801 (published November 18). [§17.7, Box 27.8]
Einstein, A., 1915c. "Erklärung der Perihelbewegung des Merkur aus der allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber. 47,* 831–839 (published November 25). [§17.7]
Einstein, A., 1915d, "Die Feldgleichungen der Gravitation," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.,* 844–847 (published December 2). [§17.7, Box 27.7]
Einstein, A., 1916a, "Ernst Mach," *Phys. Z. Sowjetunion 17,* 101–104. [Fig. 21.5]
Einstein, A., 1916b, "Näherungsweise Integration der Feldgleichungen der Gravitation," *Preuss, Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.* 688–696. [§17.7]
Einstein, A., 1916c, "Hamiltonsches Prinzip und allgemeine Relativitätstheorie," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.,* 1111–1116. [§17.7]
Einstein, A., 1917, "Kosmologische Betrachtungen zur allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber.* 142–152, reprinted in English in Lorentz *et al.* 1923. [§17.3, Boxes 27.1, 27.7]
Einstein, A., 1921, "Geometry and Experience," address to Prussian Academy of Sciences, Berlin, Jan. 27, 1921; published in *Sidelights on Relativity,* Mathuen, London, 1922. [Box 1.11]
Einstein, A., 1931, "Zum kosmologischen Problem der allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Preuss, Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Sitzber,* 235–237. [§27.11]
Einstein, A., 1934, *Essays in Science,* Philosophical Library, New York. Translated from *Mein Weltbild,* Querido Verlag, Amsterdam, 1933. [Epigraph to Chap. 17, §§21.12, 27.11, 27.12, 43.1, 44.6, Box 8.5]
Einstein, A., 1939, "On a stationary system with spherical symmetry consisting of many gravitating masses," *Ann. Math. (U.S.A.) 40,* 922–936. [Ex. 25.29]
Einstein, Albert, *Festschrift,* in commemoration of his seventieth birthday, March 14, 1949; *Rev. Mod. Phys. 21* (July 1949), 343–540.
Einstein, A., 1949a, introduction to Schilpp 1949. [Preface, Epigraph to Chap. 44, §1.2]
Einstein, A., 1949b, "Reply to criticisms," in Schilpp 1949. [Epigraph to Chap. 27]
Einstein, A., 1950, *The Meaning of Relativity,* 3d ed., Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [§21.12, 29.5, 43.1, Box 27.1, endpapers]
Einstein, A., 1954, preface to *Concepts of Space,* M. Jammer, ed., Harper, New York, p. xv. [§1.3]
Einstein, A., 1970, quoted by G. Gamow in *My World Line,* Viking Press, New York (1970), p. 44. [§§17.3, 27.8, Box 27.1]
Einstein, A., *cited by name in* §§1.1, 1.6, 7.1, 7.2, 7.4, 10.1, 12.1, 12.2, 17.3, 20.6, Boxes 12.2, 12.3, 27.7. *See also* Lorentz *et al.* 1923, Born 1971, Holton 1971, Klein 1971.
Einstein, A., and A. D. Fokker, 1914, *Ann. Phys. (Germany), 44,* 321. [§17.6]
Einstein, A., and J. Grommer, 1927, "Allgemeine Relativitätstheorie und Bewegungsgesetze," *Sitzber. Deut. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Kl. Math. Phys. Tech.* 2–13, 235–245. [§20.6]
Einstein, A., and M. Grossmann, 1913, "Entwerf einer verallgemeinerten Relativitätstheorie und einer Theorie der Gravitation," *Zeit. Math. Phys. 62,* 225–261. [§17.7]
Einstein, A., and M. Grossmann, 1914, "Kovarianzeigenschaften der Feldgleichungen der auf die verallgemeinerte Relativitätstheorie gegründeten Gravitationstheorie," *Zeit. Math. Phys. 63,* 215–225. [§17.7]
Einstein, A., L. Infeld, and B. Hoffmann, 1938, "The gravitational equations and the problem of motion," *Ann. Math. 39,* 65–100. [Ex. 39.15]
Eisenhart, L. P., 1926, *Riemannian Geometry.* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [§§21.5, 21.12, Ex. 27.4, endpapers]
Ekers, R. D. *See* Muhleman, Ekers, and Fomalont 1970.
Eliot, T. S., 1920, "Tradition and individual talent," in *The Sacred Wood; Essays on Poetry and Criticism,* Methuen, London. [Box 27.7]
Eliot, T. S., 1942, *Little Gidding,* Faber and Faber, London. [§1.7]
Ellis, G. F. R., 1971, "Relativistic cosmology," in Sachs 1971. [§22.3, Ex. 22.6, 29.5]
Ellis., G. F. R., *cited by name in* Boxes 27.7, 34.3, Ex. 32.1. *See also* Hawking and Ellis 1968 *and* 1973, *and* Stewart and Ellis 1968.
Eötvös, R. V., 1889, "Über die Anziehung der Erde auf verschiedene Substanzen," *Math. Naturw. Ber. aus Ungarn 8,* 65–68. [Box 1.2]
Eötvös, R. V., *cited by name in* §§10.1, 38.3, 38.5, 40.9.
Eötvös, R. V., D. Pekár, and E. Fekete, 1922, "Beiträge zum Gesetze der Proportionalität von Trägheit und Gravität," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 68,* 11–66. [§§10.1, 38.3, 40.9, Boxes 1.2, 38.2]
Epstein, E. E. *See* Dieter *et al.* 1962.
Ernst, F. J., 1968, "7090 FORMAC subroutines: Exterior calculus," report number PORS IIT-9, Illinois Institute of Technology. [Box 14.3]

Esposito, F. P. *See* Chandrasekhar and Esposito 1970.

Esposito, P. B. *See* Anderson *et al.* 1971.

ESRO Conference on Space Physics, Interlaken, Switzerland, September 4, 1969. *See* Ruffini and Wheeler 1971b.

Estabrook, F. B., 1969, "Post-Newtonian n-body equations of the Brans-Dicke theory," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 81–83. [Ex. 39.15]

Estermann, I., O. C. Simpson, and O. Stern, 1938, "The free fall of molecules," *Phys. Rev. 53,* 947–948. [§1.3]

Eudoxus, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Euler, H. *See* Heisenberg and Euler 1936.

Euler, L., 1760, "Demonstratio theorematis Fermatiani omnem numerum esse summam quatuor quadratorum," *Novi Comment, Petrop. 5, 93, Opera 12,* 369ff. [§41.1]

Evenson, K. M., J. S. Wells, F. R. Petersen, B. L. Danielson, G. W. Day, R. L. Barger, and J. L. Hall, 1972, "Speed of light from direct frequency and wavelength measurements of the methane-stabilized laser", *Phys. Rev. Letters 29,* 1346–1349. [§1.5]

Everitt, C. W. F., 1970, "Maxwell as a student," preprint, Stanford University, Stanford, Calif. [Box 14.6]

Everitt, C. W. F., W. M. Fairbank, and W. O. Hamilton, 1970, "General relativity experiments using low-temperature techniques," in Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970, pp. 145–159. [§40.7]

Exton, A. *See* Newman *et al.* 1965.

Fackerell, E. D., 1966, *Relativistic Stellar Dynamics,* unpublished Ph.D. thesis, University of Sydney. [Box 25.9]

Fackerell, E. D., 1968, "Relativistic stellar dynamics," *Astrophys. J. 153,* 643–660. [Box 25.8]

Fackerell, E. D. *See also* Brill *et al.* 1972.

Fackerell, E. D., and J. R. Ipser, 1972, "Weak electromagnetic fields around a rotating black hole," *Phys. Rev. D5,* 2455–2458. [§41.11]

Fackerell, E. D., J. R. Ipser, and K. S. Thorne, 1969, "Relativistic star clusters," *Comments Astrophys. & Space Phys. 1,* 134–139. [§24.6, Box 25.9]

Fadeev, L. D., 1971, "Symplectic structure and quantization of the Einstein gravitation theory," in *Actes du Congrés International des Mathématiciens, Nice 1–10 Septembre 1970,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, III, 35–40. [Box 21.1]

Fairbank, W. M. *cited by name in* Ex. 37.13. *See also* Everitt, Fairbank, and Hamilton 1970, Witteborn and Fairbank 1967, *and* Witteborn, Knight, and Fairbank 1967.

Faller, J. E. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971.

Faraday, M., *cited by name in* §5.6.

Farley, F. J. M., 1969, "The status of quantum electrodynamics," *Nuovo Cimento 1,* Numero Speciale, 59–86. [§44.2]

Farley, F. J. M. *See also* Bailey *et al.* 1968.

Farley, F. J. M., J. Bailey, R. C. A. Brown, M. Giesch, H. Jöstlein, S. van der Meer, E. Picasso, and M. Tannenbaum, 1966, "The anomolous magnetic moment of the negative muon," *Nuovo Cimento 45,* 281–286. [§38.4]

Farnsworth, D., J. Fink, J. Porter, and A. Thomson, eds., 1972, *Methods of Local and Global Differential Geometry in General Relativity,* Springer, Berlin.

Faulkner, J., and J. R. Gribbin, 1968, "Stability and radial vibration periods of the Hamada-Salpeter white-dwarf models," *Nature 218,* 734–735. [§24.2, Boxes 24.1, 26.1]

Fejér, L., and S. Mikola, eds., 1918, "Báró Eötvös Loránd Füzet," *Matem. Fiz. Lapok 27,* Nos. 6–7, Oct.–Nov., kindly translated into English for use here by Rev. Stanley Jaki. [Box 38.2]

Fekete, E. *See* Eötvös, Pekar, and Fekete 1922.

Fermi, E., 1922, "Sopra i fenomeni che avvengono in vicinanza di una linea oraria," *Atti Accad. Naz. Lincei Cl. Sci. Fis. Mat. & Nat. 31,* 184–187, 306–309. [§6.3]

Fermi, E., 1932, "Quantum theory of radiation," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 4,* 87–132. [§21.12]

Fermi, E., 1949, "On the origin of the cosmic radiation," *Phys. Rev. 75,* 1169–1174. [Box 27.7].

Fermi, E., and A. Turkevich, 1950, unpublished work described in Alpher and Herman 1950, pp. 194ff. [§28.1]

Ferrari, A., and R. Ruffini, 1969, "Theoretical implications of the second time derivative of the period of the pulsar NP 0532," *Astrophys. J. Letters 158,* L71–L75. [Ex. 36.4]

Feynman, R. P., 1942. *The Principle of Least Action in Quantum Mechanics,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University. [Boxes 17.2, 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1948, "Spacetime approach to nonrelativistic quantum mechanics," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 20,* 367–387. [Box 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1949, "Spacetime approach to quantum electrodynamics," *Phys. Rev. 76,* 769–789. [Box 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1951, "The concept of probability in quantum mechanics," in Neyman 1951, p. 533. [Box 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1955, "Slow electrons in polar crystals," *Phys. Rev. 97,* 660–665. [Box 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1963, *Lectures on Gravitation,* unpublished lecture notes prepared by F. B. Morinigo and W. G. Wagner, Calif. Institute of Technology. [§7.1, Box 7.1, §18.1]

Feynman, R. P., 1964, unpublished work cited in Fowler 1964. [Box 24.1]

Feynman, R. P. *See also* Wheeler and Feynman 1945 *and* Wheeler and Feynman 1949.

Feynman, R. P., and A. R. Hibbs, 1965, *Quantum Mechanics and Path Integrals,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [§21.1, Fig. 13.3, Boxes 17.2, 21.1]

Feynman, R. P., R. B. Leighton and M. Sands, 1964, *The Feynman Lectures on Physics,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [§21.3, Box 16.3]

Fickler, S. I. *See* Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970.

Field, G., 1973, "The origin of galaxies," in A. and M. Sandage, eds., *Stars and Stellar Systems, IX: Galaxies and the Universe,* Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago (in press). [§30.1]

Fierz, M., and W. Pauli, 1939, "Relativistic wave equations for particles of arbitrary spin in an electromagnetic field," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 173,* 211–232. [§§18.1, 18.3, 39.1, Box 7.1]

Fierz, M., and V. F. Weisskopf, 1960, *Theoretical Physics in the 20th Century: A Memorial Volume to Wolfgang Pauli,* Interscience, New York.

Fink, J. *See* Farnsworth *et al.* 1972.

Finkelstein, D., 1958, "Past-future asymmetry of the gravitational field of a point particle," *Phys. Rev. 110,* 965–967. [Box 31.2]

Fischer, A. E., and J. B. Marsden, 1972, "The Einstein equations of evolution—A geometric approach," *J. Math. Phys. 13,* 546–568. [§§21.5, 21.6]

Fischer, A. E., 1970, "The theory of superspace," in Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970. [§43.1]

Fitch, J. P. *See* Barton and Fitch 1971 *and* Barton, Bourne, and Fitch 1970.

Flamm, L., 1916, "Beitrage zur Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie," *Physik. Z. 17,* 448–454. [§23.8]

Flanders, H., 1953, "Development of an extended exterior differential calculus," *Trans. Am. Math. Soc. 75,* 311–326. [§14.5, Ex. 14.9, 14.10]

Flanders, H., 1963, *Differential Forms With Applications to the Physical Sciences,* Academic Press, New York. [§4.1, Boxes 4.4, 8.1]

Fletcher, J. G., 1966, "GRAD Assistant—a program for symbolic algebraic manipulation and differentiation," *Commun. Assoc. Comput. Machinery 9,* 552–553. [Box 14.3]

Fletcher, J. G., R. Clemens, R. Matzner, K. S. Thorne, and B. A. Zimmerman, 1967, "Computer programs for calculating general-relativistic curvature tensors," *Astrophys. J. Lett. 148,* L91–L92. [Box 14.3]

Fock, V. A., 1959, *The Theory of Space, Time, and Gravitation,* Pergamon, New York, translated by N. Kemmer. [Box 39.3, Ex. 39.15, Epigraph to Chap. 21, endpapers]

Fock, V. A., chief editor, 1968, *Abstracts, Fifth International Conference on Gravitation and the Theory of Relativity,* Publishing House of Tbilisi University, Tbilisi, USSR.

Fock, V. A. *See also* Dirac, Fock, and Podolsky 1932.

Fokker, A. D., 1965, *Time and Space, Weight and Inertia,* Pergamon Press, London. [endpapers]

Fokker, A. D. *See* Einstein and Fokker 1914.

Fomalont, E. B. *See* Muhleman, Ekers, and Fomalont 1970.

Ford, K. W. *See* Deser and Ford 1967.

Ford, K. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1959a, "Application of semiclassical scattering analysis," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 7,* 287–322. [§25.6]

Ford, K. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1959b, "Semiclassical description of scattering," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 7,* 259–286. [§25.6]

Forman, F. *See* Gittelman *et al.* 1968.

Forward, R. L., 1972, "Geodesy with orbiting gravity gradiometers," in *The Use of Artificial Satellites for Geodesy,* Geophysical Monograph Series, vol. 15, American Geophysical Union, Washington, 239–243. [Box 16.5]

Fourés-Bruhat, Y. *See* Bruhat, Y., *and* Choquet-Bruhat, Y.

Fowler, R. H., 1926, "Dense matter," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 87,* 114–122. [Box 24.1]

Fowler, W. A., 1964, "Massive stars, relativistic polytropes, and gravitational radiation," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 36,* 545–555 and 1104. [Boxes 24.1, 26.2]

Fowler, W. A., 1966, "The stability of supermassive stars," *Astrophys. J. 144,* 180–200. [§24.4, Box 26.2]

Fowler, W. A., 1967, *Nuclear Astrophysics,* American Philosophical Society, Philadelphia, Penn. [§28.1]

Fowler, W. A., 1972, "New observations and old nucleocosmochronologies," in Reines 1972. [§29.7]

Fowler, W. A. *Cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hoyle and Fowler 1963a *and* 1963b, Hoyle *et al.* 1964, *and* Wagoner, Fowler, and Hoyle 1967.

Fowler, W. A., and F. Hoyle, 1964, "Neutrino processes and pair formation in massive stars and supernovae," *Astrophys. J. Supp. 9,* 201–319. [§24.4]

Fram, D. M. *See* Boughn, Fram, and Partridge 1971.

Friedmann, A., 1922, "Über die Krümmung des Raumes," *Z. Phys. 10,* 377–386. [§§14.1, 27.9, 29.2, Boxes 14.5, 27.6]

Friedmann, A., *cited by name in* §§30.3, 42.1, Boxes 27.6, 27.7.

Frisch, D. H., and J. H. Smith, 1963, "Measurement of the relativistic time dilation using mu-mesons," *Am. J. Phys. 31,* 342–355. [§38.4]

Fröman, N., and P. O. Fröman, *JWKB approximation: contributions to the theory,* North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1965. [§22.5]

Fröman, P. O. *See* Fröman and Fröman 1965.

Fronsdal, C., 1959, "Completion and embedding of the Schwarzschild solution," *Phys. Rev. 116,* 778–781. [§23.8, Box 31.1]

Fujiwara, I., 1962, "The correspondence principle, I," in *Proceedings of the Physics Seminar in Trondheim,* no. 3, Nordita, Copenhagen, Denmark. [Box 21.1]

Fuller, R. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1962, "Causality and multiply-connected space-time," *Phys. Rev. 128,* 919–929. [§31.6, Fig. 31.5]

Galilei, G., 1592, *De Motu,* unpublished work written at the University of Pisa, 1589–1592; translation in Drabkin and Drake 1961, p. 48. [Box 1.2]

Galilei, G., 1610, *Sidereus Nuncius,* Translated by E. S. Carlos, *The Sidereal messenger,* Rivingtons, London, 1880. [Boxes 1.9, 27.7]

Galilei, G., 1623, *Il Saggiatore,* Accademia dei Lincei, Rome. [epigraph, Chap. 13]

Galilei, G., 1632, *Dialogo dei due massimi sistemi del mundo,* Landini, Florence. Translation by S. Drake, *Galileo Galilei—Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World Systems—Ptolemaic and Copernican,* Univ. of California Press, Berkeley and Los Angeles, 1953. [Box 1.9]

Galilei, G., 1638, *Discorsi e dimostriazioni matematiche intorno a due nuove scienze,* Elzevir, Leiden. Translation by H. Crew and A. de Salvio, *Dialogues Concerning Two New Sciences,* Macmillan, New York, 1914; reprinted by Dover, New York, 1954. [Boxes 1.2, 1.9, 27.7]

Galilei, G., *cited by name in* §12.2, *quoted in* epigraph of Chap. 38.

Gamow, G., 1948, "The evolution of the universe," *Nature 162,* 680–682. [§28.1]

Gamow, G., 1967, "Electricity, gravity, and cosmology," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 19,* 759–761. [§38.6]

Gamow, G., 1970, *My World Line,* Viking Press, New York. [Box 27.7]

Gamow, George, March 4, 1904–August 20, 1968, Memorial volume. *See* Reines 1972.

Gaposchkin, S., 1958, "The eclipsing binaries," *Handbuch der Physik 50,* 225–242. [Box 36.3]

Gårding, L., 1945, "Relativistic wave equations for zero rest mass," *Proc. Cambridge Phil. Soc. 41,* 49–56. [Box 32.2]

Garnett, W. *See* Campbell and Garnett 1882.

Gauduchon, P. *See* Berger, Gauduchon, and Mazet 1971.

Gasiorowizc, S., 1966, *Elementary Particle Physics,* Wiley, New York. [Box 7.1]

Gauss, K. F., 1817, letter to Olbers in his *Werke,* VIII, 177. [Epigraph to Chap. 8]

Gauss, K. F., 1830, letter to Bessel in his *Werke,* VIII, 201. [Epigraph to Chap. 8]

Gauss, K. F., 1827, "Disquisitiones generales circa superficies curvas," in *Karl Friedrich Gauss Werke,* IV, 217–258; English translation by J. C. Morehead and A. M. Hiltebeitel, *General Investigations of Curved Surfaces of 1827 and 1825,* reprinted by Raven Press, New York, 1965. [§§5.9, 22.2, Boxes 5.3, 5.4, 14.1]

Gauss, K. F., *cited by name in* §41.1.

Géhéniau, J., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Geren, P. *See* Ehlers, Geren, and Sachs 1968.

Gerlach, U., 1968, "The equation of state at supranuclear densities and the existence of a third family of superdense stars," *Phys. Rev. 172,* 1325–1330. [§24.2]

Gerlach, U., 1969, "Derivation of the ten Einstein field equations from the semiclassical approximation to quantum geometrodynamics," *Phys. Rev. 177,* 1929–1941. [§43.3, Box 17.2 part 4]

Geroch, R. P., 1967, *Singularities in the Spacetime of General Relativity: Their Definition, Existence, and Local Characterization,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University. [§§32.7, 44.1, Epigraph to Chap. 34]

Geroch, R. P., 1968, "What is a singularity in general relativity?" *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 48,* 526–540. [§34.6]

Geroch, R. P., 1971, "Spacetime structure from a global viewpoint," in Sachs 1971. [§34.1]

Geroch, R. P., *cited by name in* §§32.7, 42.1, Box 34.1.

Giacconi, R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Gibbons, J. J., *cited by name in* Box 34.3.

Giesch, M. *See* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Gilbert, R. P., and R. Newton, 1970, *Analytic Methods in Mathematical Physics,* Gordon and Breach, New York. [Box 8.5]

Gillispie, C. C. *See* Bernoulli 1733.

Ginzel, F. K., 1882, "Astronomische Untersuchungen über Finsternisse, I: Über die zwischen 26 und 103 nach Chr. stattgefundenen Sonnenfinsternisse im Allgemeinen and die Finsterniss des Plutarch ins besonders," *Sitzber. Kais. Akad. Wiss. Wien Math.-Nat. Kl. 85II,* 663–747. [Fig. 1.8]

Ginzel, F. K., 1883, "Astronomische Untersuchungen über Finsternisse, II: Grundlagen aus historischen Sonnenfinsternissen zur Ableitung empirischer Correctionen der Mondbahn," *Sitzber. Kais. Akad. Wiss. Wien Math.-Nat. Kl. 88II,* 629–755. [Fig. 1.8]

Ginzel, F. K., 1884, "Astronomische Untersuchungen über Finsternisse, III: Ermittlung empirischer Correction der Bahn des Mondes," *Sitzber. Kais. Akad. Wiss. Wien Math.-Nat. Kl. 89II.* [Fig. 1.8]

Ginzel, F. K., 1899, *Spezieller Kanon der Sonnen- und Mondfinsternisse für das Landergebiet der Klassischen Altertumwissenschaften und den Zeitraum von 900 vor Chr. bis 600 nach Chr.,* Mayer, Berlin. [Fig. 1.8]

Godfrey, B. B., 1970a, "Mach's principle, the Kerr metric, and black-hole physics," *Phys. Rev. D 1,* 2721–2725. [Box 33.3]

Godfrey, B. B., 1970b, *A Survey of the Mathematical Properties of Static, Axisymmetric Vacuum Spacetimes,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University. [§34.1]

Goebel, C. J., 1972, "Comments on the 'vibrations' of a black hole," *Astrophys. J. 172,* L95–L96. [Box 33.3]

Gödel, K., 1931, "Über formal unentscheidbare Sätze der Principia Mathematica und verwandte Systeme I," *Monatsh. Math. Phys. 38,* 173–198, English translation by B. Meltzer, *On Formally Undecidable Propositions,* with an introduction by R. O. Braithwaite, Basic Books, New York, 1962; outlined and discussed in Nagel and Newman 1958. [Box 44.5]

Gold, T., 1968, "Rotating neutron stars as the origin of the pulsating radio sources," *Nature 218,* 731–732. [Box 24.1]

Gold, T., 1972, oral remark to J. A. Wheeler. [Epigraph to Chap. 21]

Gold, T., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Bondi and Gold 1948.

Goldberg, S. I. *See* Bishop and Goldberg 1968.

Goldenberg, H. M. *See* Dicke and Goldenberg 1967.

Goldreich, P. and W. H. Julian, 1968, "Pulsar electrodynamics," *Astrophys. J. 157,* 869–880. [§24.3, Box 33.3]

Goldstein, H., 1959, *Classical Mechanics,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [§§2.1, 9.7, 33.5, Ex. 33.7]

Goldstein, J. *See* Chrétien, Deser, and Goldstein 1969.

Gott, J. R., III, and J. E. Gunn, 1971, "The Coma Cluster as an X-ray source: Some cosmological implications," *Astrophys. J. Lett. 169,* 13–15. [§29.6]

Gowdy, R. H., 1971, "Gravitational waves in closed universes," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 27,* 826–829, and erratum p. 1102. [§30.6]

Gowdy, R. H., 1973, "Vacuum spacetimes with two-parameter spacelike isometry groups and compact invariant hypersurfaces: Topologies and Boundary conditions," University of Maryland technical report 73-089 (unpublished). [§§21.10, 30.6]

Gratton, L., ed., 1966, *High-Energy Astrophysics,* Academic Press, New York.

Graves, J. C., and D. R. Brill, 1960, "Oscillatory character of Reissner-Nordstrom metric for an ideal charged wormhole," *Phys. Rev. 120,* 1507–1513. [Fig. 34.4, Ex. 31.8]

Greenstein, G. S., 1968a, "Brans-Dicke Cosmology," *Astrophys. Letters, 1,* 139–141. [§28.4]

Greenstein, G. S., 1968b, "Brans-Dicke Cosmology, II," *Ap. Space Sci., 2,* 157–165. [§28.4]

Gribbin, J. R. *See* Faulkner and Gribbin 1968.

GR*n, International Conferences on General Relativity and Gravitation. See* Berne 1955 (GR0), Chapel Hill 1957 (GR1), Royaumont 1959 (GR2), Jablonna 1962 (GR3), London 1965 (GR4), Tbilisi 1968 (GR5), Copenhagen 1971 (GR6).

Grommer, J. *See* Einstein and Grommer 1927.

Grossmann, M. *See* Einstein and Grossman 1913 *and* 1914.

Gunn, J. E., 1967, "On the propagation of light in inhomogeneous cosmologies: I, Mean effects," *Astrophys. J. 150,* 737–753. [§29.5]

Gunn, J. E., 1971, "On the distances of the quasistellar objects," *Astrophys. J. Letters, 164,* L133–L118. [Box 28.1]

Gunn, J. E. *Cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Gott and Gunn 1971, Ostriker and Gunn 1969.

Gupta, S. N., 1954, "Gravitation and electromagnetism," *Phys. Rev. 96,* 1683–1685. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Gupta, S. N., 1957, "Einstein's and other theories of gravitation," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 29,* 337–350. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Gupta, S. N., 1962, "Quantum theory of gravitation," in *Recent Developments in General Relativity,* Pergamon, New York, pp. 251–258. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Gurovich, V. Ts., 1965, "The gravitational field of rotating superdense configurations," *Astron. Zhur. 42,* 974–976. English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A.J. 9,* 750–751. [Ex. 26.1]

Gursky, H., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Guseynov, O. H. *See* Zel'dovich and Guseynov 1965.

Guthrie, W. K. C., trans., 1939, *Aristotle's On the Heavens,* Harvard Univ. Press, Cambridge, Mass. [Box 27.7]

Haeberli, W. *See* Barschall and Haeberli 1971.

Hagedorn, R., 1964, *Relativistic Kinematics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§2.10]

Hagihara, Y., 1931, "Theory of the relativistic trajectories in a gravitational field of Schwarzschild," *Japan. J. Astron. Geophys., 8,* 67–175. [§25.5]

Hall, D. B. *See* Rossi and Hall 1941.

Hall, J. L., 1972. *See* Evenson *et al.* 1972.

Halley, E., 1693, "Emendationes ac notal in vetustas Ablatenii observationes astronomicas cum restitutione tabularum lunisolarum," *Roy. Soc., London, Phil. Trans. 17,* 913. [§1.5]

Halley, E. 1720, "Of the infinity of the sphere of fix'd stars" and "Of the number, order, and light of the fix'd stars," *Roy. Soc. London, Phil. Trans. 31,* 22–24 and 24–26. [Box 27.7]

Hamilton, W. O., *cited by name in* Ex. 37.13. *See also* Everitt, Fairbank, and Hamilton 1970.

Hamilton, W. R., *cited by name in* §41.1 Boxes 17.2, 25.3.

Hamoui, A. *See* Papapetrou and Hamoui 1967 *and* 1968.

Hanni, R. S., and R. Ruffini, 1973, paper in preparation. [Box 33.2]

Hardy, E. *See* Sandage, Tamman, and Hardy 1972.

Harrison, B. K., 1959, "Exact three-variable solutions of the field equations of general relativity," *Phys. Rev. 116,* 1285–1296. [§14.1]

Harrison, B. K., K. S. Thorne, M. Wakano, and J. A. Wheeler, 1965, *Gravitation Theory and Gravitational Collapse,* Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago. [§26.1, Fig. 24.2]

Harrison, B. K., and J. A. Wheeler, 1958, "The Harrison-Wheeler equation of state," first presented in *Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay: La Structure et l'évolution de l'univers,* Editions Stoops, Brussels, 1959; presented in greater detail in Harrison *et al.* 1965. [§24.2, Fig. 24.2]

Harrison, G. H., 1970, "A Compact Method for Symbolic Computation of the Riemann Tensor," M. S. thesis, Tech. Report, Dept. of Physics and Astronomy, Univ. of Maryland, College Park. [Box 14.3]

Hartle, J. B., 1967, "Slowly rotating relativistic stars, I: Equations of structure," *Astrophys. J. 150,* 1005–1029. [Ex. 26.1]

Hartle, J. B., 1970, "Slowly rotating relativistic stars, IV: Rotational energy and moment of inertia for stars in differential rotation," *Astrophys. J. 161,* 111–118. [§20.5, Ex. 33.13]

Hartle, J. B., 1971, "Long-range neutrino forces exerted by Kerr black holes," *Phys. Rev. D 3,* 2938–2940. [§41.11, Boxes 25.2, 32.2, 33.1]

Hartle, J. B., 1972, "Can a Schwarzschild black hole exert long-range neutrino forces?" in Klauder 1972. [Boxes 25.2, 32.2, 33.1]

Hartle, J. B. *See also* Brill and Hartle 1964, Hawking and Hartle 1972.

Hartle, J. B., and D. H. Sharp 1965, "Variational principle for the hydrostatic equilibrium of a relativistic, rotating fluid," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 15,* 909–911. [Ex. 26.1]

Hartle, J. B., and K. S. Thorne, 1968, "Slowly rotating relativistic stars, II: Models for neutron stars and supermassive stars," *Astrophys. J. 153,* 807–834. [Box 36.1, Fig. 24.2]

Hartle, J. B., and K. S. Thorne, 1974, "Slowly rotating relativistic stars, VII: Emission of gravitational waves due to quasiradial pulsation," *Astrophys. J.,* in preparation. [Box 14.3]

Harvey, J. A. *See* Dabbs *et al.* 1965.

Hauser, W., 1970, "On the fundamental equations of electromagnetism," *Am. J. Phys. 38,* 80–85. [§4.1]

Havens, W. W., Jr. *See* Durbin, Loar, and Havens 1952.

Hawking, S. W., 1966a, "Singularities and the geometry of space-time" Adams Prize Essay, Cambridge University, Cambridge, England. [Box 34.3]

Hawking, S. W., 1966b, "The occurrence of singularities in cosmology," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 294,* 511–521. [Box 34.3]

Hawking, S. W., 1969, "On the rotation of the Universe," *Observatory 89,* 38–39. [Box 34.3]

Hawking, S. W., 1971a, "Gravitationally collapsed objects of very low mass," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 152,* 75–78. [Box 33.3]

Hawking, S. W., 1971b, "Gravitational radiation from colliding black holes," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 26,* 1344–1346. [§34.5, Boxes 33.1, 33.4, Ex. 34.4]

Hawking, S. W., 1972a, "Black holes in general relativity," *Commun. Math. Phys. 25,* 152–166. [§34.5, Boxes 33.1, 33.3, 33.4, 34.3, Ex. 34.4]

Hawking, S. W., 1972b, "Gravitational Radiation: The Theoretical Aspect," *Contemp. Phys. 13,* 273–282. [Box 34.3]

Hawking, S. W., 1973, "The Event Horizon," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1973. [§§34.1, 34.5]

Hawking, S. W., *cited by name in* §§32.7, 42.1, Box 27.7. *See also* Bardeen, Carter, and Hawking 1973 *and* Collins and Hawking 1973.

Hawking, S. W., and G. F. R. Ellis, 1968, "The cosmic black-body radiation and the existence of singularities in our universe," *Astrophys. J. 152,* 25–36. [§28.3, Box 34.3]

Hawking, S. W., and G. F. R. Ellis, 1973, *The Large Scale Structure of Space-time,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§§34.1, 34.6, Box 33.1, endpapers]

Hawking, S. W., and J. B. Hartle, 1972, "Energy and angular momentum flow into a black hole," *Commun. Math. Phys. 27,* 283–290. [Box 33.3]

Hawking, S. W., and R. Penrose, 1969, "The singularities of gravitational collapse and cosmology., *Proc. R. Soc. London A 314,* 529–548. [§§34.6, 44.1]

Hayakawa, S., 1965a, "Cosmological interpretation of the weak forces," *Prog. Theor. Phys. 33,* 538–539. [§44.6]

Hayakawa, S., 1965b, "Atomism and cosmology," *Prog. Theor. Phys. Supp.*, special number, Yukawa thirtieth anniversary issue, 532–541. [§44.6]

Hazard, C., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Hearn, A. C., 1970, "A program for symbolic algebraic computation," in *Proceedings of SHARE XXXIV,* 4.470–4.481. [Box 14.3]

Heckmann, O. *See* Schücking and Heckmann 1958.

Heisenberg, W., and H. Euler, 1936, "Folgerungen aus der Diracschen Theorie des Positrons," *Z. Phys. 98,* 714–732. [Ex. 40.8]

Helmholtz, H. L. F., *cited by name in* Box 38.2.

Henderson, T., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Hepp, K., 1969, *Théorie de la renormalisation,* Springer, Berlin. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Herman, R. C. *See* Alpher and Herman 1948a,b *and* 1950.

Hermann, R., 1966, *Lie Groups for Physicists,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§8.2]

Hernandez, W. C., Jr., 1967, "Material sources for the Kerr metric," *Phys. Rev. 159,* 1070–1072. [§33.3]

Heron (Hero of Alexandria), 1899, *Heronis Alexandrini Opera Omnia,* Teubner, Leipzig; *also in* G. Sarton, *A History of Science,* Harvard Univ. Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1952, I, 73. [Box 13.1]

Heron, G., trans., 1954, *Nicolas Cusanus's Of Learned Ignorance,* Yale Univ. Press, New Haven, Conn. [Box 27.7]

Hertz, G. L., *cited by name in* Box 17.3.

Hewish, A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Hewish, A., S. J. Bell, J. D. H. Pilkington, P. F. Scott, and R. A. Collins, 1968, "Observation of a rapidly pulsating radio source," *Nature 217,* 709–713. [Box 24.1]

Hey, J. S., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Hibbs, A. R., 1951, "Quantum mechanics," in M. Kac, *Probability and Related Topics in Physical Science,* Interscience, New York, pp. 205–221. [Box 21.1]

Hibbs, A. R. *See also* Feynman and Hibbs 1965.

Hicks, N. J., 1965, *Notes on Differential Geometry,* Van Nostrand, Princeton, N.J. [Box 8.1, endpapers]

Hilbert, D., 1915, "Die Grundlagen der Physik," *Konigl. Gesell. d. Wiss. Göttingen, Nachr., Math.-Phys. Kl.,* 395–407; see also *Math. Annalen 92* (1924), 1–32. [§§17.7, 21.2, Box 17.2]

Hilbert, D., 1917, "Die Grundlagen der Physik (Zweite Mitteilung)," *Konigl. Gesell. d. Wiss. Göttingen, Nachr., Math.-Phys. Kl.,* 53–76. [§17.7]

Hilbert, D., *cited by name in* §21.1.

Hill, H. A. *See* Turner and Hill 1964.

Hill, J. M., 1971, "A Measurement of the gravitational deflection of radio waves by the sun," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc., 154,* 7P-11P. [Box 40.1]

Hill, T., 1967, unpublished work referred to in DeWitt 1967c. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Hiltebeitel, A. M. *See* Gauss 1827

Hipparchus, *cited by name in* Box 16.1.

Hlavatý, Václav, *Festschrift* on the occasion of his 70th birthday, Jan. 27, 1964. *See* Hoffmann 1966.

Hönl, H., 1962, "Allgemeine Relativitätstheorie und Machsches Prinzip," in *Physikertagung Wien,* Physik Verlag, Mosbach/Baden, Germany. [§§21.12, 43.1]

Hoffmann, B., ed., 1966, *Perspectives in Geometry and Relativity: Essays in Honor of Václav Hlavatý,* Indiana Univ. Press, Bloomington.

Hoffman, B. *See also* Einstein, Infeld, and Hoffman 1938.

Hoffman, W. F. *See* Chiu and Hoffman 1964.

Hohn F. E., 1966, *Applied Boolean Algebra: An Elementary Introduction,* 2d ed., Macmillan, New York. [§44.5]

Holden, D. J., 1966, "An investigation of the clustering of radio sources," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc., 133,* 225–228. [§27.1]

Holdridge, D. B. *See* Ohandley *et al.*, 1969.

Holmes, A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Holton, G., 1965, personal communication, London. [Preface]

Holton, G., 1971, *Einstein. The Life and Times, by R. W. Clark,* book review, *New York Times Book Review,* September 5, 1–20. [Box 1.11]

Holton, G. *See also* Kollros 1956.

Horstmann, H. *See* Dabbs *et al.* 1965

Hoyle, F., 1948, "A new model for the expanding universe," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 108,* 372–382. [§28.4]

Hoyle, F., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Fowler and Hoyle 1964 *and* Wagoner, Fowler, and Hoyle 1967.

Hoyle, F., and W. A. Fowler, 1963a, "On the nature of strong radio sources," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 125,* 169–176. [§24.5, Box 24.1]

Hoyle, F., and W. A. Fowler, 1963b, "Nature of strong radio sources," *Nature 197,* 533–535. [§24.5, Box 24.1]

Hoyle, F., W. A. Fowler, G. R. Burbidge, and E. M. Burbidge, 1964, "On relativistic astrophysics," *Astrophys. J. 139,* 909–928. [Box 33.3]

Hsiang, W.-C., and B. J. Sanderson, 1965, "Twist-spinning spheres in spheres," *Illinois J. Math. 9,* 651–659. [Box 44.3]

Hubble, E. P., 1920, "Photographic investigations of faint nebulae" (Ph.D. thesis), *Pub. Yerkes Obs., 4,* 69–85. [Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1925, "NGC 6822, a remote stellar system," *Astrophys. J. 62,* 409–433. [Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1926a, "A spiral nebula as a stellar system: Messier 33," *Astrophys. J. 63,* 236–274. [Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1926b, "Extra-galactic nebulae," *Astrophys. J. 64,* 321–369. [Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1929, "A relation between distance and radial velocity among extragalactic nebulae," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 15,* 169–173. [§§27.9, 29.2, Boxes 27.1, 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1934a, *Red-shifts in the spectra of nebulae* (Halley Lecture), Clarendon Press, Oxford, Eng. [Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1934b, "The distribution of extra-galactic nebulae," *Astrophys. J. 79,* 8–76. [§27.1, Box 29.5]

Hubble, E. P., 1936, "Effects of redshifts on the distribution of nebulae," *Astrophys. J. 84,* 517–554. [§27.1]

Hubble, E. P., *cited by name in* §17.3, Boxes 27.7, 29.5. *See also* Mayall 1970.

Hubble, E. P., and M. L. Humason, 1931, "The velocity-distance relation among extra-galactic nebulae," *Astrophys. J. 74,* 43–80. [Box 29.5]

Hughes, R. G., and M. S. Longair, 1967, "Evidence of the isotropy of faint radio sources," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 135,* 131–137. [§27.1]

Hughes, V. W., H. G. Robinson, and V. B. Beltran-Lopez, 1960, "Upper limit for the anisotropy of inertial mass from nuclear resonance experiments," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 4,* 342–344. [§38.7]

Hughston, L., 1969, "Multifluid cosmologies," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 987–989. [§27.9]

Humason, M. L. *See* Hubble and Humason 1931.

Huneke, J. C. *See* Wasserburg, Schramm, and Huneke 1969.

Hunter, C., 1967, "Fragmentation," in Ehlers 1967, pp. 169–194. [Boxes 32.2, 32.3]

Huygens, C., 1698, *Cosmotheoros,* The Hague. English translation, *The Celestial Worlds Discovered or, Conjectures Concerning the Inhabitants, Plants and Productions of the Worlds in the Planets,* London, also 1698. [Box 27.7]

Imshennik, V. S. *See* Ivanova, Imshennik, and Nadezhin 1969.

Infeld, Leopold, 1962, volume dedicated to him in connection with his 60th birthday, Feb. 8, 1958: *Recent Developments in General Relativity,* Pergamon Press, Oxford, and PWN—Polish Scientific Publishers, Warsaw.

Infeld, L., ed., 1964, *Conférence Internationale sur les théories relativistes de la gravitation,* Gauthier-Villars, Paris, France.

Infeld, L. *See also* Einstein, Infeld, and Hoffman 1938.

Infeld, L., and J. Plebanski, 1960, *Motion and Relativity,* Pergamon, New York. [§20.6, endpapers]

Infeld, L., and A. Schild, 1949, "On the motion of test particles in general relativity," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 21,* 408–413. [§20.6]

Ingalls, R. P. *See* Shapiro, Ash *et al.* 1971, Shapiro, Smith *et al.* 1971, Shapiro *et al.* 1972.

Ipser, J. R., 1969, "Relativistic, spherically symmetric star clusters, III: Stability of compact isotropic models," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 17–43. [Boxes 24.1, 25.9]

Ipser, J. R., 1970, "Gravitational radiation from slowly rotating, fully relativistic stars," *Astrophys. J. 166,* 175–196. [Ex. 36.4]

Ipser, J. R., 1971, "Electromagnetic test fields around a Kerr-metric black hole," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 27,* 529–531. [§41.11, Ex. 33.14, Box 33.3]

Ipser, J. R. *See also* Brill *et al.* 1972, Fackerell and Ipser 1972, *and* Fackerell, Ipser, and Thorne 1969.

Ipser, J. R., and K. S. Thorne, 1968, "Relativistic, spherically symmetric star clusters, I: Stability theory for radial perturbations," *Astrophys. J. 154,* 251–270. [Box 24.1]

Isaacson, R. A., 1968a, "Gravitational radiation in the limit of high frequency, I: The linear approximation and geometrical optics," *Phys. Rev. 166,* 1263–1271. [§35.13]

Isaacson, R. A., 1968b, "Gravitational radiation in the limit of high frequency, II: Nonlinear terms and the effective stress tensor," *Phys. Rev. 166,* 1272–1280. [§35.13, Ex. 35.14]

Isenberg, J. A., *cited by name in* Figure 25.7.

Israel, W., 1960, "Relativistic theory of shock waves," *Proc. Roy. Soc. A 259,* 129–143. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

Israel, W., 1966, "Singular hypersurfaces and thin shells in general relativity," *Nuovo Cimento 44 B,* 1–14, and correction in *48 B,* 463. [§§21.5, 21.13]

Israel, W., 1967a, "Event horizons in static vacuum spacetimes," *Phys. Rev. 164,* 1776–1779. [Box 33.1]

Israel, W., 1967b, "Gravitational collapse and causality," *Phys. Rev. 153,* 1388–1393. [Ex. 21.27]

Israel, W., 1968, "Event horizons in static electrovac spacetimes," *Commun. Math. Phys. 8,* 245–260. [Box 33.1]

Israel, W., 1970, *Differential Forms in General Relativity,* Communications of the Dublin Institute for Advanced Studies, series A, no. 17. [§4.1]

Israel, W., 1971, personal communication. [Box 33.4]

Israel, W., 1972, "The relativistic Boltzman Equation," in O'Raifeartaigh 1972, pp. 201–241. [§22.6]

Israel, W., *cited by name in* Box 34.3. *See also* de la Cruz and Israel 1967.

Ithaca 1965. *See* Cornell University 1965 *or* Ehlers 1967.

Ivanova, L. N., V. S. Imshennik, and D. K. Nadezhin, 1969, "Investigations into the dynamics of supernova explosions," *Sci. Inf. Astron. Council USSR Acad. Sci. 13,* 3–93. [§32.7]

Jablonna 1962, *Relativistic Theories of Gravitation,* proceedings of a conference held in Warsaw and Jablonna, July 1962, edited by L. Infeld, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1964.

Jackson, J. D., 1962, *Classical Electrodynamics,* Wiley, New York. [§2.1]

Jacobi, K. G. J., *cited by name in* Box 17.2.

Jaffe, J., 1969, "Collapsing objects and the backward emission of light," *Ann. Phys. U.S.A. 55,* 374–390. [§32.3]

Janis, A. I. *See* Couch *et al.* 1968.

Jauch, J., 1968, *Foundations of Quantum Mechanics,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [Box 44.5]

Jeans, J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Jones, B. T. J., and P. J. E. Peebles, 1972, "Chaos in Cosmology," *Comm. Astrophys. Space Sci. 4,* 121–128. [§30.1]

Jöstlein, H. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968 *and* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Johnson, F. R., 1937, *Astronomical Thought in Renaissance England,* John Hopkins Press, Baltimore, [Box 27.7]

Jordan, P., 1955, *Schwerkraft und Weltall,* Vieweg und Sohn, Braunschweig. [§§38.6, 44.6]

Jordan, P., 1959, "Zum gegenwärtigen Stand der Diracschen kosmologischen Hypothesen," *Z. Phys. 157,* 112–121. [§§38.2, 38.6, 44.6, Box 39.1]

Jordan, P., *cited by name in* §§40.1, 40.6, 40.9.

Jordan, P., J. Ehlers, and R. Sachs, 1961, "Exact solutions of the field equations of general relativity, II: Contributions to the theory of pure gravitational radiation," (in German) *Akad. Wiss. Lit. Mainz Abh. Math.-Nat. Kl. 1,* 3–60. [§22.5]

Julian, W. H. *See* Goldreich and Julian 1968.

Jurgens, R. F. *See* Shapiro, Ash *et al.* 1971.

Kac, M., and S. Ulam, 1968, *Mathematics and Logic: Retrospect and Prospects,* Praeger, New York; abridged paperback edition by Pelican Books, Harmondsworth, Middlesex, 1971. [Box 44.5]

Kant, I., 1754, "Whether the earth has undergone an alteration of its axial rotation," *Wöchentliche Frag- und Anzeigungs-Nachrichten,* Kanter, Königsberg, mid-June issue [§1.5]

Kant, I., 1755, *Allgemeine Naturgeschichte und Theories des Himmels, oder Versuch von der Verfassung und dem Mechanischen Ursprunge des ganzen Welt gebäudes nach Newtonischen Grundsätzen Abgehandelt,* Petersen, Konigsberg and Leipzig. Translation by W. Hastie, with introduction by M. K. Munitz, *Universal Natural History and Theory of the Heavens,* Univ. of Michigan Press, Ann Arbor, 1969. [Box 27.7]

Kaplan, S. A., 1949a, "Sverkhplotnye' zvezdy ('Superdense' stars)," *Naukovy Zapiski (Sci. Notes Univ. Lwow) 15,* 109–115. [Box 24.1]

Kaplan, S. A., 1949b, "O krugovykh orbitakh v teorii tyagoteniya Einshteina (On circular orbits in Einstein's theory of gravitation)," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 19,* 951–952. [Box 24.1]

Kasner, E., 1921a, "Geometrical theorems on Einstein's cosmological equations," *Am. J. Math. 43,* 217–221. [§30.2]

Kasner, E., 1921b, "Finite representation of the solar gravitational field in a space of six dimensions," *Am. J. Math 43,* 130–133. [§23.8]

Kasner, E., 1921c, "The impossibility of Einstein fields immersed in flat space of five dimensions," *Am. J. Math 43,* 126–129. [§23.8]

Kasner, E., *cited by name in* Boxes 27.7, 30.1.

Kaula, W. M. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971.

Keller, J. B., R. M. Lewis, and B. D. Seckler, 1956, "Asymptotic solution of some diffraction problems," *Commun. Pure & Appl. Math. 9,* 207–265. [§22.5]

Keller, L. V., *cited by name in* Box 27.6.

Kelley, J. L., 1955, *General Topology,* Van Nostrand, New York. [Box 34.2]

Kelvin. *See* Thomson, W., Lord Kelvin.

Kemble, E. C., 1937, *The Fundamental Principles of Quantum Mechanics,* McGraw-Hill, New York. Later editions available in paperback. [Box 25.3]

Keres, P. *See* Unt and Keres 1972.

Kepler, J., 1609, *Astronomia nova αιτιολογητος, seu Physica coelestis tradita comentariis de motibus stellae Martis,* Prague. [Box 27.7]

Kepler, J., 1619, *De Harmonice Mundi,* Augsburg. [Box 27.7]

Kerr, R. P., 1963, "Gravitational field of a spinning mass as an example of algebraically special metrics," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 11,* 237–238. [§§33.2, 33.6, Box 33.2]

Kerr, R. P., and A. Schild, 1965, "A new class of vacuum solutions of the Einstein field equations," in *Proceedings of the Galileo Galilei Centenary Meeting on General Relativity, Problems of Energy and Gravitational Waves,* G. Barbera, ed., Comitato Nazionale per le Manifestazione Celebrative, Florence, pp. 222–233. [§33.6]

Khalatnikov, I. M., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Belinsky and Khalatnikov 1969a, 1969b, *and* 1970, Belinsky, Khalatnikov, and Lifshitz 1970, Belinsky, Lifshitz, and Khalatnikov 1971, Lifshitz and Khalatnikov 1963a *and* 1963b, *and* Ryan 1972b.

Khalatnikov, I. M., and E. M. Lifshitz, 1970, "General cosmological solutions of the gravitational equations with a singularity in time," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 24,* 76–79. [§34.6, Box 30.1]

Khuri, N., 1957, unpublished calculation quoted in Lindquist and Wheeler 1957. [§25.5]

Killing, W., 1892, "Über die Grundlagen der Geometrie," *J. Reine Angew. Math. 109,* 121–186. [§25.2]

Kilmister, C. W., 1971, "More about the King and the Vizier," *Gen. Relativity & Grav. 2,* 35–36. [Fig. 44.3]

Kirchhoff, G.-R., *cited by name in* Box 38.2.

Kittel, C., 1958, *Elementary Statistical Physics,* Wiley, New York. [§23.4]

Klauder, J., ed., 1972, *Magic Without Magic: John Archibald Wheeler,* W. H. Freeman, San Francisco.

Klauder, L. T., Jr., M. Wakano, J. A. Wheeler, and R. Willey, 1959, "Kinematics of a spherical isotropic uniform universe," in *Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay: La Structure et l'évolution de l'univers,* Éditions Stoops, Brussels, Belgium. [§29.5]

Klein, F., 1872, "Erlangerprogram: Vergleichende Betrachtungen über neuere geometrischen Forschungen," translation in *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc. 2,* 215–249, 1893. [§2.2]

Klein, M. J., 1971, *Einstein: The Life and Times, by R. W. Clark,* book review, *Science, 174,* 1315–1316. [Box 1.11]

Klein, O., 1966, "Boundary conditions and general relativity" in A. de-Shalit, H. Feshbach, and L. Van Hove, eds., *Preludes in Theoretical Physics in Honor of V. F. Weisskopf,* North Holland, Amsterdam, pp. 23–26. [Box 27.7]

Klein, O., 1971, "Arguments concerning relativity and cosmology," *Science 171,* 339–345. [§§27.10, 27.11, Box 27.7]

Klein, O. *See also* Alfvén and Klein 1962.

Klemperer, W. B. *See* Deutsch and Klemperer 1962.

Kline, M., 1954, "Asymptotic solution of linear hyperbolic partial-differential equations," *J. Rat. Mech. & Anal. 3,* 315–342. [§22.5]

Klüber, H. V., 1960, "The determination of Einstein's light-deflection in the gravitational field of the sun," *Vistas in Astronomy 3,* 47–77, London, Pergamon Press. [Box 40.1]

Kluitenberg, G. A., and S. R. deGroot, 1954, "Relativistic thermodynamics of irreversible processes, III," *Physica 20,* 199–209. [§22.2]

Kneebone, G. T., 1963, *Mathematical Logic and the Foundations of Mathematics: An Introductory Survey,* Van Nostrand, Princeton, N. J. [Box 44.5]

Knight, L. V. *See* Witteborn, Knight, and Fairbank 1967.

Kollros, L., 1956, *in* Carl Seelig, ed. *Helle Zeit- Dunkle Zeit—In Memoriam Albert Einstein,* Europa, Zurich. We thank Professor G. Holton for this quotation. [preface]

Kovács, S., *cited by name in* ex. 35.20.

Kraichnan, R. H., 1955, "Special-relativistic derivation of generally covariant gravitation theory," *Phys. Rev. 55,* 1118–1122. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Kramers, H. A., 1957, *Quantum Mechanics,* North Holland Pub. Co., Amsterdam, Holland. Translated from the German by D. ter Haar. [§21.1]

Krefetz, E., 1967, "The equilibrium of slowly rotating configurations in the post-Newtonian approximation: Corrections to Clairaut's equations," *Astrophys. J. 148,* 589–612. [Ex. 26.1]

Kretschmann, E., 1917, "Über den physikalischen Sinn der Relativitätspostulate, A. Einsteins neue und seine ursprungliche Relativitätstheorie," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 53,* 575–614. [§§12.5, 17.6]

Kreuzer, L. B., 1968, "Experimental measurement of the equivalence of active and passive gravitational mass," *Phys. Rev. 169,* 1007–1012. [§40.8]

Krogh, C., and R. Baierlein, 1968, "Lunar laser ranging and the Brans-Dicke theory," *Phys. Rev. 175,* 1576–1579. [§40.6]

Krotkov, R. *See* Bertotti, Brill, and Krotkov 1962 *and* Roll, Krotkov, and Dicke 1964.

Kruskal, M. D., 1960, "Maximal extension of Schwarzschild metric," *Phys. Rev. 119,* 1743–1745. [§31.4, Box 31.1]

Kuchař, K., 1968, "Charged shells in general relativity and their gravitational collapse," *Czech J. Phys. B 18,* 435–463. [§21.13]

Kuchař, K., 1970, "Ground state functional of the linearized gravitational field," *J. Math. Phys. 11,* 3322–3334. [§43.4]

Kuchař, K., 1971a, "Canonical quantization of cylindrical gravitational waves," *Phys. Rev. D 4,* 955–986. [§§21.1, 21.10]

Kuchař, K., 1971b, "Gravitational action functional reexpressed by means of intrinsic and extrinsic curvature," unpublished lecture given in the course *Relativity* at Princeton University. [§§21.6, 21.11, Ex. 21.10]

Kuchař, K., 1972, "A bubble-time canonical formalism for geometrodynamics," *J. Math. Phys. 13,* 768–781. [§§21.1, 21.10, 21.11, Ex. 21.24]

Kuchař, K., *cited by name in* §21.1, Ex. 13.7, 21.10.

Kuhlthau, A. R. *See* Rose *et al.* 1969.

Kundt, W., 1971, "Cosmological density fluctuations during Hadron stage," in Sachs 1971, pp. 365–372. [§28.1]

Kundt, W. *See also* Ehlers and Kundt 1962.

Kundt, W., and E. T. Newman, 1968, "Hyperbolic differential equations in two dimensions," *J. Math. Phys. 9,* 2193–2210. [§§35.8, 38.8]

Künzle, H. P., 1971, "On the Spherical Symmetry of a Static Perfect Fluid," *Commun. Math. Phys. 20,* 85–100. [§23.1]

Kuper, C. G., and A. Peres, eds., 1971, *Relativity and Gravitation,* Gordon and Breach, New York.

Kursunoglu, B., 1962, *Modern Quantum Theory,* W. H. Freeman, San Francisco. [Box 21.1]

Kustaanheimo, P., 1966, "Route dependence of the gravitational red shift," *Phys. Lett. 23,* 75–77. [§39.1]

Lagrange, J. L., *cited by name in* Box 17.2.

Lamb, W. E., Jr., and R. C. Retherford, 1947, "Fine structure of the hydrogen atom by a microwave method," *Phys. Rev. 72,* 241–243. [Fig. 43.3, Box 17.2 part 6]

Lambert, J. H., 1761, *Kosmologischen Briefe,* Augsburg; see his *The System of the World,* translated, with modifications, from the French by J. Jacque, London, 1800; reprinted in part in Munitz 1957. [Box 27.7]

Lanczos, K., 1922, "Bemerkung zur de Sitterschen Welt," *Phys. Z. 23,* 539–543. [§21.13]

Lanczos, K., 1924, "Flächenhafte Verteilung der Materie in der Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 74,* 518–540. [§21.13]

Lanczos, K., 1970, *The Variational Principles of Mechanics,* Univ. of Toronto Press, Toronto, 4th ed. [Box 21.1]

Landau, L. D., 1932, "On the theory of stars," *Phys. Z. Sowjetunion 1,* 285–288. [Box 24.1]

Landau, L. D., and E. M. Lifshitz, 1959, *Fluid Mechanics,* Pergamon Press, London. [Ex. 22.7]

Landau, L. D., and E. M. Lifshitz, 1960, *Mechanics,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [Box 22.4]

Landau, L. D., and E. M. Lifshitz, 1962, *The Classical Theory of Fields,* translated by M. Hamermesh, Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [§§20.3, 20.5, 36.1, endpapers]

Landau, L. D. and E. M. Lifshitz, 1971, *The Classical Theory of Fields,* 3d rev. English ed., Addison-Wesley, Reading, Massachusetts, and Pergamon, London. [endpapers]

Langer, W. D., and A. G. W. Cameron, 1969, "Effects of hyperons on the vibrations of neutron stars," *Astrophys. & Space Sci. 5,* 213–253. [§24.3]

Lao-tzu, 3d century B.C. *Tao Tê Ching,* Poem 1. Translated as *The Way of Life,* R. B. Blakney, New American Library, 1955; translation revised by Janet Ten Broeck. [Epigraph to Chap. 18]

Langevin, P. *See* Einstein 1912.

Laplace, P. S., 1795, *Le Système du monde,* vol. II, Paris. Published in English as *The System of the World,* W. Flint, London, 1809. [Fig. 24.1, Box 24.1, Epigraph to chap. 33]

Laplace, P. S., *cited by name in* Box 17.2.

Lascoux, J., 1968, "Perturbation theory in quantum field theory and homology," in DeWitt and Wheeler 1968, 354–419. [Ex. 4.5]

Laurence, D. H. *See* Boni, Russ, and Laurence 1960.

Lawson, R. W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Leavitt, H., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Lebovitz, N. R. *See* Chandrasekhar and Lebovitz 1968.

Lecat, M., 1924, *"Bibliographie de la relativité,"* Lamertine, Bruxelles, cited in preface of present bibliography.

Ledoux, P., and Th. Walraven, 1958, "Variable stars," *Handbuch der Physik 51,* S, Flügge ed., Springer-Verlag, Berlin, pp. 353–604. [Box 24.2]

Lefschetz, S. 1949, *Introduction to Topology,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. For a fuller account of fixed-point theorems, see Dunford and Schwartz 1958. [§36.1]

Leibniz, G. W., 1714, *La Monadologie.* English translation available in several books; parts included in P. P. Wiener, ed., *Leibniz Selections,* Scribners, New York, 1951. [§44.6]

Leibniz, G. W., 1961, untitled essay in his *Philosophischen Schriften, vol. 7,* ed. by C. J. Gerhardt, Olms Verlagsbuchhandlung, Hildesheim, p. 200. [Epigraph to Chap. 21]

Leibniz, G. W., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Leighton, R. B., 1959, *Principles of Modern Physics,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [§2.1]

Leighton, R. B. *See also* Feynman, Leighton, and Sands 1964.

Lemaître, G., 1933a, "Formation of nebulae in the expanding universe," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 196,* 1085–1087. [§30.6]

Lemaître, G., 1933b, "Spherical condensations in the expanding universe," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 196,* 903–904. [§30.6]

Lemaître, G., 1933c, "L'univers en expansion," *Ann. Soc. Sci. Bruxelles I A53,* 51–85. [Box 31.1]

Lemaître, G., 1949, cited in Schilpp 1949, p. 440. [Epigraph to Chap. 36]

Lemaître, G., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Lenin, V. I., 1927, *Materialism and Empiriocriticism: Critical Comments on a Reactionary Philosophy,* International Publications, New York, 2d English ed. of *Materializm' i Empiriokrititsizm': Kriticheskia Zametki ob' Odnoi Reaktsionnoi Filosofii,* Zveno Press, Moscow, 1909. [§21.12]

Lense, J. *See* Thirring and Lense 1918.

Les Houches, France, Ecole d'ete de physique theorique: 1963, *see* DeWitt and DeWitt 1964b; 1966, *see* DeWitt, Schatzman, and Veron 1967 (third volume of three); 1972, *see* DeWitt and DeWitt 1973.

Leutwyler, H., 1968, "Boundary conditions for the state functional in the quantum theory of gravity," in DeWitt and Wheeler 1968, pp. 309–317. [§43.3]

Lewis, R. M., 1958, "Asymptotic expansion of steady-state solutions of symmetric hyperbolic linear differential equations," *J. Rat. Mech. & Math. 7,* 593–641. [§22.5]

Lewis, R. M. *See also* Keller, Lewis, and Seckler 1956.

Liang, E. *See* Eardley, Liang, and Sachs 1972.

Lichnerowicz, A., 1944, "L'intégration des équations de la gravitation relativiste et le problème des *n* corps," *J. Math. Pures & Appl. 23,* 37–63. [§21.11]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1955, *Théories relativistes de la gravitation et de l'électromagnétisme,* Masson, Paris. [endpapers]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1961a, "Anticommutateur du champ spinoriel en relativité générale," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 252,* 3742–3744. [Box 44.3]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1961b, "Anticommutateur pour le champ correspondant au spin 3/2 sur un espace d'Einstein," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 253,* 940–942. [Box 44.3]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1961c, "Théorie de Petiau-Duffin-Kemmeren," *Acad. Sci., Paris, Comptes Rend. 253,* 983–985. [Box 44.3]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1962, "Radiations en relativité générale," especially "Le tenseur de superénergie," in CNRS 1962, pp. 93–106. [Ex. 15.2]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1964, "Propagateurs, commutateurs, et anticommutateurs en relativité générale," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964. [Box 44.3, Ex. 15.2]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1967, *Relativistic Hydrodynamics and Magnetohydrodynamics; Lectures on the Existence of Solutions,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§§22.2, 22.3, Box 22.2]

Lichnerowicz, A., 1971, "Ondes des choc, ondes infinitesimales et rayons en hydrodynamique et magnetohydrodynamique relativistes," in Cattaneo 1971, pp. 88–203. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

Lichtenberg, D. B., 1965, *Meson and Baryon Spectroscopy,* Springer-Verlag, New York. [§38.4]

Lifshitz, E. M., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Belinsky, Khalatnikov, and Lifshitz 1970, Belinsky, Lifshitz, and Khalatnikov 1971, Khalatnikov and Lifshitz 1970, *and* Landau and Lifshitz, 1959, 1960, 1962, and 1971.

Lifshitz, E. M., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1963a, "Investigations in relativistic cosmology," in *Advances in Physics 12,* 185–249; translated from the Russian by J. L. Beeby. [§§30.6, 34.6]

Lifshitz, E. M., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1963b, "Problems of relativistic cosmology," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk 80,* 391–438. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—Uspekhi 6,* 495–522, 1964. [§§30.6, 34.6]

Lifshitz, E. M., and I. M. Khalatnikov, 1970, "Oscillatory approach to singular point in the open cosmological model," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. Pis'ma., 11,* 200–203. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 11,* 123–125 (1971).

Lighthill, M. J., 1958, *Introduction to Fourier Analysis and Generalized Functions,* Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, England. [§4.7]

Lilley, A. E. *See* Dieter *et al.* 1962.

Lin, C. C., L. Mestel, and F. H. Shu, 1965, "The gravitational collapse of a uniform spheroid," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 1431–1446. [Boxes 32.2, 32.3]

Lindquist, R. W., 1960, *The Two-Body Problem in Geometrodynamics,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University, Princeton, N.J. [Ex. 32.1]

Lindquist, R. W., 1966, "Relativistic transport theory," *Ann. Phys. (USA) 37,* 487–518. [§22.6]

Lindquist, R. W. *See also* Boyer and Lindquist 1967.

Lindquist, R. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1957, "Dynamics of a lattice universe by the Schwarzschild cell method," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 29,* 432–433. [§27.10, Box 25.2, Fig. 25.3, 27.3]

Liouville, J., 1837, "Second mémoire sur le développement des fonctions ou parties des fonctions en séries . . . . ," Liouville's *J. de Math. Pures et Appliquées 2,* 16–35. [§22.5]

Loar, H. H. *See* Durbin, Loar, and Havens 1952.

London 1965, International Conference on Relativistic Theories of Gravitation, King's College, University of London, July 1965. Proceedings multilithed in 2 volumes by King's College.

Longair, M. S. *See* Hughes and Longair 1967.

Lorentz, H. A., *cited by name in* §20.6 *and* Box 16.4.

Lorentz, H. A., A. Einstein, H. Minkowski, and H. Weyl, 1923, *The Principle of Relativity: A Collection of Original Memoirs,* Methuen, London. Paperback reprint, Dover, New York.

Lowry, R. A. *See* Rose *et al.* 1969.

Lukash, V. N. *See* Doroshkevich, Lukash, and Novikov 1971.

Lurie, D., and N. Mukunda, eds., 1963, *Proceedings of Seminar on Unified Theories of Elementary Particles,* University of Rochester report URPA-11, Rochester, N.Y.

Lynden-Bell, D., 1967, "Statistical mechanics of violent relaxation in stellar systems," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 136,* 101–121. [Box 33.3]

Lynden-Bell, D., 1969, "Galactic nuclei as collapsed old quasars," *Nature 223,* 690–694. [Box 33.3]

Lynden-Bell, D., and M. Rees, 1971, "On quasars, dust, and the galactic center," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 152,* 461–475. [Box 33.3]

Lynds, C. R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

MacCallum, M. A. H. *See* Penrose and MacCallum 1973.

MacDonald, G. J. F. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971 *and* Munk and MacDonald 1960.

Mach, E., 1912, *Die Mechanik in Ihrer Entwicklung Historisch-*

Kritisch Dargestellt, Brockhaus, Leipzig. English translation by T. J. McCormack, published in 1960 as *The Science of Mechanics* with an introduction by Karl Menger, Open Court, La Salle, Ill. [§§21.1, 21.12]
Mach, E., *cited by name in* Box 27.1.
Machado, A., 1940, "Proverbios y cantares XXIX," in his *Obras,* Editorial Seneca, Mexico, pp. 235–236. [Epigraph to Chap. 43]
MacKenzie, R. E. *See* Auslander and MacKenzie 1963.
Mackey, M. B., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Manasse, F. K., and C. W. Misner, 1963, "Fermi Normal Coordinates and Some Basic Concepts in Differential Geometry," *J. Math. Phys. 4,* 735–745. [§13.6]
Mandelstam, S. *See* Yourgrau and Mandelstam 1968.
Mann, T., 1937, *Freud, Goethe, Wagner,* Knopf, New York. Essay on Freud published originally as *Freud und die Zukunft* (*Vortrag Gehalten in Wien am 8 Mai 1936 zur Feier von Sigmund Freuds 80 Geburtstag*), Bormann-Fischer, Wien (1936). [§44.5]
Manukin, A. B. *See* Braginsky, Manukin, and Tikhonov 1970.
Marconi, G. W., *cited by name in* Preface.
Marinus of Naples, *cited by name in* Fig. 1.8.
Markus, L. *See* Auslander and Markus 1959.
Marle, C., 1969, "Sur l'établissement des équations de l'hydrodynamique des fluides relativistes dissipatifs, I et II," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincare, 10,* 67–126 and 127–194. [§22.6, Ex. 22.7]
Marsden, J. B. *See* Fischer and Marsden 1972.
Martin, W. L. *See* Anderson *et al.* 1971.
Marzke, R. F., and J. A. Wheeler, 1964, in Chiu and Hoffman 1964. [Box 16.4]
Mathews, J. *See also* Peters and Mathews 1963.
Mathews, J., and R. Walker, 1965, *Mathematical Methods of Physics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [Box 26.1]
Matzner, R. A., 1968, "The present temperature of primordial black-body gravitational radiation," *Astrophys. J. 154,* 1123–1125. [§27.10]
Matzner, R. A. *See also* Clemens and Matzner 1967 *and* Fletcher *et al.* 1967.
Matzner, R. A., and C. W. Misner, 1972, "Dissipative effects in the expansion of the universe," *Astrophys. J. 171,* 415–432. [§§28.2, 30.4]
Maupertuis, P. L. M. de, 1746, "Recherche des loix du mouvement," *Acad. R. Sci. Berlin.* [Epigraph to Chap. 21]
Mavrides, M., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.
Maxwell, J. C., *cited by name in* Preface, Box 4.6.
May, M., and R. H. White, 1966, "Hydrodynamic calculations of general-relativistic collapse," *Phys. Rev. 141,* 1232–1241. [§§32.7, 42.7, Box 33.3, Ex. 32.7]
May, M., and R. H. White, 1967, "Stellar dynamics and gravitational collapse," *Meth. Computat. Phys. 73,* 219–258. [§22.2, Boxes 22.2, 33.3]
Mayall, N. U., 1970, "Edwin Powell Hubble," *Biograph. Mem. Nat. Acad. Sci., 41,* 176–214. [Box 29.5]
Mayall, N. U., and Oort, J. H., 1942, "Further data bearing on the identification of the Crab Nebula with the supernova of 1054 A.D., part II: The astronomical aspects," *Proc. Astron. Soc. Pacific 54,* 95–104. [Box 24.1]
Mazet, E. *See* Berger, Gauduchon, and Mazet 1971.
McCrea, W. H., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Bondi and McCrea 1960.
McDonald, E., *cited by name in* Fig. 41.6.
McVittie, G. C., 1956, *General Relativity and Cosmology,* Chapman and Hall, London. [endpapers]
McWhirter, N., and R. McWhirter, 1971, *The Guinness Book of Records,* Guinness Superlatives, Ltd., Enfield, Middlesex [Chap. 12 epigraph]
Meer, S. van der. *See* Farley *et al.* 1966.
Meixner, J., and H. G. Reik, 1959, "Thermodynamik der irreversiblen Prozesse," *Handbuch der Physik, 3, Teil 2,* 413–505. [§22.2]
Meixner, J., and F. W. Schäfke, 1954, *Mathieusche Funktionen und Sphäroidfunktionen,* Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Germany. [Ex. 33.14]
Melbourne, W. G. *See* Ohandley *et al.* 1969.
Meltzer, D. W. *See* Bardeen, Thorne, and Meltzer 1966.
Meltzer, D. W., and K. S. Thorne, 1966, "Normal modes of radial pulsation of stars at the end point of thermonuclear evolution," *Astrophys. J. 145,* 514–543. [Box 26.1]
Menger, Karl, 1949, see Schilpp 1949, pp. 466–467. [Epigraph to Chap. 2, Epigraph to Chap. 9]
Menskii, M. B. *See* Braginsky and Menskii 1971.
Mercier, A., 1953, *Analytical and Canonical Formalism in Physics,* North-Holland, Amsterdam, Holland. Paperback reprint, Dover, New York, 1963. [Box 21.1]
Mercier, A., and M. Kervaire, 1956, *Jubilee of Relativity Theory,* proceedings of a conference in Bern, Switzerland, July 11–16, 1955, Birkhäuser, Bern.
Merzbacher, E., 1961, *Quantum Mechanics,* Wiley, New York. [§16.3]
Messiah, A., 1961, *Quantum Mechanics,* translated from the French by G. M. Temmer, North-Holland, Amsterdam, Holland. [Ex. 3.12]
Mestel, L. *See* Lin, Mestel, and Shu 1965.
Mielnik, B., and J. Plebanski, 1962, "A study of geodesic motion in the field of Schwarzschild's solution," *Acta Phys. Polon. 21,* 239–268. [§25.5]
Mikola, S. *See* Fejér and Mikola 1918.
Milne, E. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Milnor, J., 1962, "A survey of cobordism theory," *Enseignement Math. 8,* 16–23. [Box 44.3]
Milnor, J., 1963, "Spin structures on manifolds," *Enseignement Math. 9,* 198–203. [Box 44.3]
Milnor, J., 1965a, "On the Stiefel-Whitney numbers of complex manifolds and of spin manifolds," *Topology 3,* 223–230. [Box 44.3]
Milnor, J., 1965b, "Remarks concerning spin manifolds," in Cairns 1965, p. 55. [Box 44.3]
Milton, J., 1665, *Paradise Lost,* Book V, Lines 623–625, in *The Complete Poems of John Milton,* Union Library Association of New York, 1936. [Epigraph to Chap. 25]
Minkowski, H., 1908, address delivered at the 80th Assembly of German Natural Scientists and Physicians, Cologne. English translation, "Space and time," in *The Principle of Relativity,* Dover, New York, 1923. [§1.5]
Minkowski, H. *See also* Lorentz *et al.* 1923.

Minkowski, R., 1942, "The Crab Nebula," *Astrophys. J. 96,* 199–213. [Box 24.1]
Minkowski, R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Minkowski, R., and O. C. Wilson, 1956, "Proportionality of nebular redshifts to wave length," *Astrophys. J. 123,* 373–376. [§38.6]
Misner, C. W., 1957, "Feynman quantization of general relativity," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 29,* 497–509. [Box 21.1]
Misner, C. W., 1964a, "Differential geometry and differential topology," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964b, pp. 881–929. [Box 8.1]
Misner, C. W., 1964b, "Waves, Newtonian fields, and coordinate functions," in Infeld 1964. [§35.8]
Misner, C. W., 1965, "Relativistic equations for spherical gravitational collapse with escaping neutrinos," *Phys. Rev. B137,* 1360–1364. [Box 23.1]
Misner, C. W., 1968, "The isotropy of the universe," *Astrophys. J. 151,* 431–457. [§§28.2, 30.3]
Misner, C. W., 1969a, "Gravitational collapse," in Chrétien, Deser, and Goldstein 1969, vol I. [§§12.1, 32.5, Boxes 8.1, 31.2, Ex. 31.8, endpapers]
Misner, C. W., 1969b, "Mixmaster universe," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 22,* 1071–1074. [§§21.10, 28.2, 30.6, 34.6, Box 30.1]
Misner, C. W., 1969c, "Absolute zero of time," *Phys. Rev. 186,* 1328–1333. [§§28.3, 34.6]
Misner, C. W., 1970, "Classical and quantum dynamics of a closed universe," in Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970, pp. 55–79. [Box 30.1]
Misner, C. W., 1972a, "Minisuperspace," in Klauder 1972. [§43.3, Box 30.1]
Misner, C. W., 1972b, "Stability of Kerr black holes against scalar perturbations," *Bull. Am. Phys. Soc. (II) 17,* 472. [Ex. 33.14]
Misner, C. W., 1973, "A minsuperspace example: The Gowdy T^3 cosmology," Caltech Orange Aid Preprint. Submitted to *Phys. Rev.* [§43.3]
Misner, C. W., *cited by name in* §§21.1, 35.8, Boxes 17.2 part 2′, 17.3, 27.7. *See also* Arnowitt, Deser, and Misner 1962, Beckedorff and Misner 1962, Chrzanowski and Misner 1973, Manasse and Misner 1963, *and* Matzner and Misner 1972.
Misner, C. W., and D. H. Sharp, 1964, "Relativistic equations for adiabatic, spherically symmetric gravitational collapse," *Phys. Rev. B 136,* 571–576. [§§21.13, 22.2, Ex. 32.7, Box 23.1]
Misner, C. W., and A. H. Taub, 1968, "A singularity-free empty universe," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 55,* 233. English original in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 28,* 122, 1969. [§§32.5, 34.6]
Misner, C. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1957, "Classical physics as geometry: Gravitation, electromagnetism, unquantized charge, and mass as properties of curved empty space," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 2,* 525–603, reprinted in Wheeler 1962. [§§20.6, 21.8, 21.9, Fig. 44.1, Boxes 4.1, 4.4, 15.1, 21.2, Ex. 20.7]
Misner, C. W., and J. A. Wheeler, 1972, "Conservation laws and the boundary of a boundary," in Shelest 1972, pp. 338–351. [§15.3]
Moffet, A., *cited by name in* Box 40.1.
Møller, C., 1952, *The Theory of Relativity,* Oxford Univ. Press, London; 2d ed., 1972. [endpapers]
Møller, C., ed., 1962, *Evidence for Gravitational Theories,* Academic Press, New York.
Moncrief, V. E. *See* Berger *et al.* 1972.
Morduch, G. E. *See* Whitrow and Morduch 1965.
Morehead, J. C. *See* Gauss 1827.
Morette, C., 1951, "On the definition and approximation of Feynman's path integrals," *Phys. Rev. 81,* 848–852. [Box 21.1]
Morette, C. *See also* DeWitt, C.
Morgan, T., and K. S. Thorne, 1973, in preparation. [Box 32.3]
Morganstern, R. E., 1973, "Observational constraints imposed by Brans-Dicke cosmologies," *Phys. Rev. D 7,* 1570–1579. [§28.4]
Moritz, B. K., 1969, *A Study of the General Relativistic Dynamics of the Klein-Alfvén Cosmology,* doctoral dissertation, University of Maryland [§27.11, §28.4]
Morse, M., 1934, *The calculus of variations in the large,* American Mathematical Society, Providence, R.I. [Fig. 13.2]
Morse, M., and S. S. Cairns, 1969, *Critical Point Theory in Global Analysis and Differential Topology: an Introduction,* Academic Press, New York. [Fig. 13.2]
Moser, J. K. *See* Siegel and Moser 1971.
Mottleson, B. R. *See* Bohr and Mottleson 1969.
Muhleman, D. O. *See* Anderson *et al.* 1971.
Muhleman, D. O., R. D. Ekers, and E. B. Fomalont, 1970, "Radio interferometric test of the general relativistic light bending near the sun," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 24,* 1377–1380. [Box 40.1]
Muhlemann, D. O., and P. Reichley, 1964, "Effects of general relativity on planetary radar distance measurements," *JPL Space Programs Summary 4,* no. 37-29, p. 239. [§40.4]
Muhlemann, D. O., and P. Reichley, 1965, "General relativistic effects on radar propagation," *JPL Space Programs Summary 4,* no. 37-31, p. 342. [§40.4]
Mukunda, N. *See* Lurie and Mukunda 1963.
Mulholland, J. D. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971 *and* Ohandley *et al.* 1969.
Munitz, M. K., 1957, *Theories of the Universe,* Free Press, New York. [Box 27.7]
Munk, W. H., and G. J. F. MacDonald, 1960, *The Rotation of the Earth; a Geophysical Discussion,* Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, England. [Fig. 1.8]
Nadezhin, D. K. *See* Ivanova, Imshennik, and Nadezhin 1969.
Nagel, E., and J. R. Newman, 1958, *Gödel's Proof,* New York Univ. Press, New York.
NASL, 1969, *Proceedings of the 1969 Symposium on Unconventional Inertial Sensors (U) Vol. I,* Naval Applied Science Laboratory, Brooklyn, New York.
Nasr, H., 1964, *Three Muslim sages: Avicenna, Suhrawardi, Ibn Arabi,* Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Mass. [Box 27.7]
Navier, L., *cited by name in* Box 17.2 part 6.
Nazarenko, V. S. *See* Braginsky and Nazarenko 1971.
Ne'eman, Y., 1965, "Expansion as an energy source in quasistellar radio sources," *Astrophys. J. 141,* 1303–1305. [§34.3]
Nester, J. M., *cited by name in* §35.1.

Neugebauer, O., 1959, *Greek Horoscopes,* with H. B. van Hösen, American Philosophical Society, Philadelphia, Pa. [Fig. 1.8]

Neugebauer, P. V., 1927, "Zür astronomischen Chronologie," *Astron. Nachr. 230,* 57–64. [Fig. 1.8]

Neugebauer, P. V., 1929, *Astronomische Chronologie,* 2 vols, De Gruyter, Berlin. [Fig. 1.8]

Neugebauer, P. V., 1930, "Schoch Todesanzeige," *Astron. Nachr. 237,* 221–224. [Fig. 1.8]

Neugebauer, P. V., and C. Schoch, 1930, "Zür astronomischen Chronologie, II," *Astronomische Abhandlungen. Erganzungshefte zu den Astron. Nachrichten 8,* no. 2, 24–32. [Fig. 1.8]

Newman, E. T. *See also* Couch and Newman 1972, Couch *et al.* 1968, *and* Kundt and Newman 1968.

Newman, E. T., E. Couch, K. Chinnapared, A. Exton, A. Prakash, and R. Torrence, 1965, "Metric of a rotating, charged mass," *J. Math. Phys. 6,* 918–919. [§33.2]

Newman, E. T., and R. Penrose, 1965, "10 exact gravitationally-conserved quantities," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 15,* 231–233. [Ex. 32.11]

Newman, J. R. *See* Nagel and Newman 1958.

Newton, I., 1687, *Philosophiae naturalis principia mathematica,* 1st ed., Streater, London; final ed., in English translation by A. Motte, 1729, revised by A. Cajori, *Sir Isaac Newton's Mathematical Principles of Natural Philosophy and His System of the World,* Univ. of California Press, Berkeley and Los Angeles, 1934; paperback, 1962. [Boxes 1.10, 21.1, 27.7]

Newton, I., 1730, *Opticks, or a Treatise of the Reflection, Refraction, Inflection, & Colours of Light,* 4th ed.; reprint, ed. by D. H. D. Roller, Dover, New York, 1952. [Box 1.10]

Newton, I., *cited by name in* §§1.1, 1.3, 12.1, 12.2, Boxes 1.2, 12.2, 12.3, 12.6, Ex. 12.7, 12.8, 13.4, 17.2 part 6.

Newton, R. *See* Gilbert and Newton 1970.

Neyman, J., 1951, *Proceedings of the Second Berkeley Symposium on Mathematical Statistics and Probability,* Univ. of California Press, Berkeley, Calif.

Ni, W.-T., 1970, work reported by K. S. Thorne at the NASA-ESRO conference on experimental tests of gravitation theories, California Institute of Technology, November 1970; *see* Thorne, Ni, and Will 1971. [§39.2, Box 39.1]

Ni, W.-T., 1972, "Theoretical frameworks for testing relativistic gravity, IV: A compendium of metric theories of gravity and their post-Newtonian limits," *Astrophys. J. 176,* 769–796. [§§17.6, 38.2, 39.2, 40.1, 40.5, 40.8, Boxes 39.1, 39.2, 39.5]

Ni, W.-T. *See also* Thorne, Ni, and Will 1971.

Ni, W.-T., 1973, "Relativistic stellar stability: an empirical approach," *Astrophys. J. 181,* 939–956. [Box 39.5, Ex. 39.7]

Nicetas, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Nickerson, H. K., D. C. Spencer, and N. E. Steenrod, 1959, *Advanced Calculus,* Van Nostrand, Princeton, New Jersey. [§4.1]

Nijenhuis, A., 1952, "Theory of the geometric object," dissertation, Amsterdam. [§2.2]

Nizer, L., 1972, quoted in the *New York Times* February 7, 1972. [Epigraph to Chap. 40]

Noerdlinger, P. D., and V. Petrosian, 1971, "The effect of cosmological expansion on self-gravitating ensembles of particles," *Astrophys. J. 168,* 1–9. [§27.5]

Noonan, T. W. *See* Robertson and Noonan 1968.

Nordstrøm, G., 1913, "Zur Theorie der Gravitation vom Standpunkt des Relativitätsprinzips," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 42,* 533–554. [§17.6]

Nordstrøm, G., 1918, "On the energy of the gravitational field in Einstein's theory," *Proc. Kon. Ned. Akad. Wet. 20,* 1238–1245. [Ex. 31.8]

Nordstrøm, G., *cited by name in* §§38.2, 42.7.

Nordtvedt, K., 1968a, "Equivalence principle for massive bodies, I: Phenomenology," *Phys. Rev. 169,* 1014–1016. [§§38.2, 40.9]

Nordtvedt, K., 1968b, "Equivalence principle for massive bodies, II: Theory," *Phys. Rev. 169,* 1017–1025. [§§38.2, 39.3, 40.9, Box 39.5]

Nordtvedt, K., Jr., 1969, "Equivalence principle for massive bodies including rotational energy and radiation pressure," *Phys. Rev., 180,* 1293–1298. [§§38.2, 39.3]

Nordtvedt, K., 1970, "Solar system Eötvos experiments," *Icarus 12,* 91–100. [§40.8, Box 39.5]

Nordtvedt, K., 1971a, "Equivalence principle for massive bodies, IV: Planetary bodies and modified Eötvos-type experiments," *Phys. Rev. D 3,* 1683–1689. [§§40.8, 40.9, Box 39.5]

Nordtvedt, K., 1971b, in Davies 1971, pp. 32–37. [§§39.5, 40.9, Box 39.5]

Nordtvedt, K., Jr. *See also* Will and Nordtvedt 1972.

Nordtvedt, K., Jr., and C. M. Will, 1972, "Conservation laws and preferred frames in relativistic gravity, II: Experimental evidence to rule out preferred-frame theories of gravity," *Astrophys. J. 177,* 775–792. [§§39.2, 40.5, 40.8, Box 39.5]

North, J. D., 1965, *The Measure of the Universe,* Clarendon Press, Oxford. [Box 27.7]

Novikov, I. D., 1963, doctoral dissertation, Shternberg Astronomical Institute, Moscow. [§31.4]

Novikov, I. D., 1964, "Delayed explosion of a part of the Friedmann universe, and quasars," *Astron. Zh. 41,* 1075–1083. English translation in *Sov. Astron.-Astron. J. 8,* 857–863. [§34.3]

Novikov, I. D., 1966a, "Change of relativistic collapse into anticollapse and kinematics of a charged sphere," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. Pis'ma 3,* 223–227. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 3,* 142–144. [§34.6, Fig. 34.4]

Novikov, I. D., 1966b, "The replacement of relativistic gravitational contraction by expansion, and the physical singularities during contraction," *Astron. Zh. 43,* 911–918. English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A. J. 10,* 731–737. [§34.6, Fig. 34.4]

Novikov, I. D. *See also* Doroshkevich, Lukash, and Novikov 1971, Doroshkevich, Zel'dovich, and Novikov 1965, *and* Zel'dovich and Novikov 1966, 1971, *and* 1974.

Novikov, I. D., and K. S. Thorne, 1973, "Astrophysics of black holes," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1973, pp. 343–450. [Box 33.3]

Nutku, Y. *See* Berger *et al.* 1972 *and* Chandrasekhar and Nutku 1969.

O'Connell, R. F., 1972, "Present status of the theory of the relativistic gyroscope experiment," *Gen. Rel. & Grav. 3,* 123–133. [§40.7, Ex. 40.8]

Ogorodnikov, K. F., 1965, *Dynamics of Stellar Systems,* ed. by A. Beer, Macmillan, New York. [§25.7]

Ohandley, D. A., D. B. Holdridge, W. G. Melbourne, and J. D. Mulholland, 1969, *J.P.L. Development Ephemeris No. 69,* J.P.L. Technical report 32-1465, Caltech Jet Propulsion Laboratory, Pasadena. [§40.1]

Ohanian, H. C. *See* Belasco and Ohanian 1969.

Olbers, H. W. M., 1826, "Über die Durchsichtigkcit des Weltraumes" *Bode Jahrbuch, 110;* substantially the same article in *Bibliothèque Universelle* for February 1826, and in *Edinburgh New Philosophical Journal* for April–October 1826, 141. [Box 27.7]

Omnes, R. L., 1969, "Possibility of matter-antimatter separation at high temperature," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 23,* 38–40. [§27.10]

O'Murchadha, N., and J. W. York, Jr., 1973, personal communication; *see also* O'Murchadha, N., "Existence and uniqueness of solutions of the Hamiltonian constraint of general relativity," doctoral dissertation, Princeton Univ., February 5, 1973. [§21.11]

O'Neill, B., 1966, *Elementary Differential Geometry,* Academic Press, New York. [Box 8.1]

Oort, J. H., 1958, "Distribution of galaxies and the density of the universe," in *Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay: La Structure et l'évolution de l'univers,* Éditions Stoops, Brussels, Belgium. [§29.6]

Oort, J. H., 1970, "Matter far from the galactic plane associated with spiral arms," in *Spiral Structure of our Galaxy, Basel, Switzerland, 29 Aug.–4 Sep. 1969,* D. Reidel, Dordrecht, Netherlands. [§28.2]

Oort, J. H., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Mayall and Oort 1942.

Oppenheimer, J. R., and H. Snyder, 1939, "On continued gravitational contraction," *Phys. Rev. 56,* 455–459. [§§32.3, 32.4, 34.6, Fig. 24.1, Box 24.1]

Oppenheimer, J. R., and G. Volkoff, 1939, "On massive neutron cores," *Phys. Rev. 55,* 374–381. [§23.2, Fig. 24.1, Box 24.1, Ex. 23.10]

Oppolzer, Th. V., 1887, "Canon der Finsternisse," *Math.–Naturwiss. Cl. d. Akad. der Wiss. Denkschriften 52,* Wien. [Fig. 1.8]

O'Raifeartaigh, L., ed., 1972, *General Relativity, Papers in Honor of J. L. Synge,* Oxford Univ. Press, London.

Ostriker, J. P., and J. E. Gunn, 1969, "On the nature of pulsars, I: Theory," *Astrophys. J. 157,* 1395–1417. [§24.3, Ex. 33.13]

Pacini, F., 1968, "Rotating neutron stars, pulsars, and supernova remnants," *Nature 219,* 145–146. [§24.3]

Page, L., 1941, lecture at Dec. 17 meeting of the American Institute of Electrical Engineers, New York. [Epigraph to Chap. 3]

Palatini, A., 1919, "Deduzione invariantiva delle equazioni gravitazionali dal principio di Hamilton," *Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo 43,* 203–212. [§21.2]

Palatini, A., *cited by name in* §§21.1, 21.2.

Panov, V. I. *See* Braginsky and Panov 1971.

Paolini, F., R., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Papanastassiou, D. A., and G. J. Wasserburg, 1969, "Initial strontium isotopic abundances and the resolution of small time differences in the formation of planetary objects," *Earth & Planetary Sci. Lett. 5,* 361–376. [Box 29.3]

Papapetrou, A., 1951, "Spinning test-particles in general relativity, I," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 209,* 248–258. [§20.6, Ex. 40.8]

Papapetrou, A., 1954a, "Eine neue Theorie des Gravitationsfeldes, I," *Math. Nachr. 12,* 129–141. [§40.8]

Papapetrou, A., 1954b, "Eine neue Theorie des Gravitationsfeldes, II," *Math. Nachr. 12,* 143–154. [§40.8]

Papapetrou, A., 1954c, "Eine Theorie des Gravitationsfeldes mit einer Feldfunktion," *Z. Phys. 139,* 518–532. [§40.8]

Papapetrou, A., 1958, "Uber zeit abhängige Lösungen der Feldgleichungen der allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 2,* 87–96. [§35.8]

Papapetrou, A., and A. Hamoui, 1967, "Surfaces caustiques dégénerées dans la solution de Tolman: La singularité physique en relativité générale," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré A 6,* 343–364. [Ex. 32.7]

Papapetrou, A., and A. Hamoui, 1968, "Couches simples de matières en relativité générale," *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré A 9,* 179–211. [§21.13]

Papapetrou, A., and H. Treder, 1959, "Das Sprungproblem erster Ordnung in der allgemeinen Relativitätstheorie," *Math. Nachr. 20,* 53–66. [§21.13]

Papapetrou, A., and H. Treder, 1962, "Shock waves in general relativity," in Infeld 1962, pp. 351–360. [§21.13]

Paris 1967, *Fluides et Champs Gravitationnel en relativité générale,* Colloques Internationaux du CNRS, no. 170, organizé au Collège de France, du 19 au 23 juin 1967, Éditions du Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique, 1969.

Parker, H. M. *See* Rose *et al.* 1969.

Parker, L., 1966, *Particle Creation in the Expanding Universe,* Ph.D. thesis, Harvard University, unpublished. [§30.5]

Parker, L., 1969, "Quantized fields and particle creation in expanding universes, I," *Phys. Rev. 183,* 1057–1068. [§30.5]

Parker, L., 1972, "Particle Creation in Isotropic Cosmologies," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 28,* 705–708. [§30.5]

Parsons, S. J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Partridge, R. B., 1969, "The primeval fireball today," *Am. Sci. 57,* 37–74. [§27.2]

Partridge, R. B. *See also* Boughn, Fram, and Partridge 1971.

Pauli, W., 1921, "Relativitätstheorie," in *Enzyklopädie der Mathematischen Wissenschaften,* II, 539–775, Teubner, Leipzig, Germany. [Preface]

Pauli, W., 1934, "Die allgemeinen Prinzipien der Wellenmechanik," *Handbuch der Physik 24,* Part 1, 2d ed. [§16.3]

Pauli, W., 1947, *Exclusion Principle and Quantum Mechanics,* 1945 Nobel prize lecture, Editions Grisson, Neuchatel, Switzerland. Related discussion in Fierz and Weisskopf 1960. [Box 44.3]

Pauli, W., ed., 1955, *Niels Bohr and the Development of Physics,* McGraw-Hill, New York.

Pauli, W., 1958, *Theory of Relativity,* Pergamon Press, London. English translation by Gerard Field of Pauli 1921 with supplementary notes (1956) by the author. [endpapers]

Pauli, Wolfgang, Memorial volume. *See* Fierz and Weisskopf 1960.

Pauli, W., *cited by name in* Preface. *See also* Fierz and Pauli 1939.

Paya, D. *See* Dabbs *et al.* 1965.

Peebles, P. J. E., 1966, "Primordial He abundance and fireball, II," *Astrophys. J. 146,* 542–552. [§28.1]

Peebles, P. J. E., 1969, "Cosmology," *Proc. Roy. Astron. Soc. Canada, 63,* 4–31. [§30.1]

Peebles, P. J. E., 1971, *Physical Cosmology,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [§§27.1, 27.2, 28.1, 29.6, Box 27.7]

Peebles, P. J. E., 1972, "Gravitational collapse and related phenomena from an empirical point of view, or, black holes are where you find them," *Gen. Rel. & Grav. 3,* 63–82. [Box 33.3]

Peebles, P. J. E. *Cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Dicke and Peebles 1962a, 1962b, *and* 1965, Dicke *et al.* 1965, *and* Jones and Peebles 1972.

Peebles, P. J. E., and J. T. Yu, 1970, "Primeval adiababic perturbation in an expanding universe," *Astrophys. J. 162,* 815–836. [§30.1]

Pekar, D. *See* Eötvös, Pekar, and Fekete 1922.

Penrose, R., 1959, "The apparent shape of a relativistically moving sphere," *Proc. Cambridge Phil. Soc. 55,* 137–139. [§41.10]

Penrose, R., 1964, "Conformal treatment of infinity," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964b. [§34.2]

Penrose, R., 1965a, "Zero rest-mass fields including gravitation: Asymptotic behavior," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 284,* 159–203. [§34.2, Box 32.2]

Penrose, R., 1965b, "Gravitational collapse and space-time singularities," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 14,* 57–59. [§§32.7, 34.6, Box 34.2]

Penrose, R., 1966, "An analysis of the structure of spacetime," Adams Prize Essay. [Box 34.2]

Penrose, R., 1968a, "Structure of spacetime," in DeWitt and Wheeler 1968. [§§34.1, 34.4, 41.7, 41.11, Boxes 34.1, 34.2, 44.3]

Penrose, R., 1968b, "Twistor quantization and the curvature of spacetime," *Int. J. Theor. Phys. 1,* 61–99. [Box 34.2]

Penrose, R., 1969, "Gravitational collapse: The role of general relativity," *Nuovo Cimento 1,* special number, 252–276. [§33.7, Boxes 33.2, 33.4, 34.2]

Penrose, R., 1972, "Techniques of differential topology in relativity," in Farnsworth *et al.* (1972). [§34.1]

Penrose, R., *cited by name in* §§32.7, 41.9, 42.1, Box 27.7, Fig. 41.7. *See also* Hawking and Penrose 1969, Infeld 1964, Klauder 1964, Newman and Penrose 1965, *and* Walker and Penrose 1970.

Penrose, R., and M. A. H. MacCallum, 1973, "Twistor Theory: An approach to the quantization of fields and spacetime," *Physics Reports 6C,* no. 4, 242–315. [Box 34.2]

Penzias, A. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Penzias, A. A., and R. W. Wilson, 1965, "A measurement of excess antenna temperature at 4080 Mc/s," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 419–421. [§27.2]

Pereira, C. M. *See* Brill *et al.* 1972.

Peres, A., 1962, "On the Cauchy problem in general relativity, II," *Nuovo Cimento 26,* 53–62. [§43.3]

Peres, A., and N. Rosen, 1964, "Gravitational radiation damping of nongravitational motion," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 10,* 94–99. [§§36.1, 36.8]

Peters, P. C., 1964, "Gravitational radiation and the motion of two point masses," *Phys. Rev. B 136,* 1224–1232. [§§36.1, 36.7, Ex. 36.9]

Peters, P. C., and J. Mathews, 1963, "Gravitational radiation from point masses in a Keplerian orbit," *Phys. Rev. 131,* 435–440. [§36.6, Ex. 36.6]

Peterson, B. A., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Peterson, F. P. *See* Anderson, Brown, and Peterson 1966a *and* 1966b.

Peterson, F. R. *See* Evenson *et al.* 1972.

Pethick, C. J. *See* Baym, Bethe, and Pethick 1971.

Petrosian, V. *See* Noerdlinger and Petrosian 1971.

Petrov, A. Z., 1954, *Reports of the State University of Kazan 114,* book 8, 55. [§33.6]

Petrov, A. Z., 1969, *Einstein Spaces,* Pergamon, New York. [§33.6]

Petrov, Aleksei Zinoveivich, Memorial volume. *See* Shelest 1972.

Pettengill, G. H. *See* Shapiro, Ash *et al.* 1971, Shapiro, Smith *et al.* 1971, and Shapiro *et al.* 1972.

Philolaus, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Phillips, J. W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Picasso, E. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968 *and* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Piir, I. I., 1971, "Maxwell equations in the Schwarzschild gravitational field" (in Russian), *Izv. Akad. Nauk Estonian S. S. R., Fiz. Mat., 20,* 413–419. [Ex. 32.11]

Pilkington, J. D., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hewish *et al.* 1968.

Pirani, F. A. E., 1956, "On the physical significance of the Riemann tensor," *Acta Phys. Pol. 15,* 389–405. [§20.6, Ex. 40.8]

Pirani, F. A. E., 1957, "Invariant formulation of gravitational radiation theory," *Phys. Rev. 105,* 1089–1099. [§§21.13, 33.6, Ex. 15.2]

Pirani, F. A. E., 1965, "Introduction to gravitational radiation theory," in Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965, pp. 249–373. [§§41.7, 41.11, endpapers]

Pirani, F. A. E. *See also* Bondi, Pirani, and Robinson 1959, Ehlers, Pirani, and Schild 1972, *and* Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965.

Pittsburgh 1970, Regional Conference on Relativity, July 13–17, 1970. *See* Farnsworth *et al.* 1972.

Planck, M., 1899, "Über irreversible Strahlungsvorgänge," *Sitzungsber. Deut. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Kl. Math.—Phys. Tech.,* 440–480. [§§43.4, 44.6]

Plato. *See* Cornford 1937.

Plebanski, J. *See* Infeld and Plebanski 1960 *and* Mielnik and Plebanski 1962.

Plotkin, H. E. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971.

Plutarch, *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Podolsky, B. *See* Dirac, Fock, and Podolsky 1932.

Podurets, M. A., 1964, "Asymptotic behavior of the optical luminosity of a star in gravitational collapse in terms of general relativity theory," *Astron. Zhur. 41,* 1090–1096, English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A. J. 8,* 868–873 (1965). [§32.3]

Podurets, M. A., 1966, "The character of the singularity in the gravitational collapse of a star," *Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR*

167, 1025–1027. English translation in *Sov. Ph.—Doklady 11,* 275–276. [§34.6, Ex. 32.3]
Podurets, M. A. *See also* Zel'dovich and Podurets 1965.
Poincaré, H. *cited by name in* §§3.1, 12.3.
Poisson, S., *cited by name in* Box 17.2 part 6.
Polievktov-Nikoladze, N. M., 1969, "On the theory of the gravitational field," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 57,* 2010–2020. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 30* (1970), 1089–1095. [Box 17.2 part 6]
Polkinghorne, J. C., 1955, "On the Feynman principle," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 230,* 272–276. [Box 21.1]
Polubarinova-Kochina, P. Ya., 1963, "Alexander Alexandrovitch Friedmann (In memory of A. A. Friedmann)," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk, 80,* 345–352. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—Uspekhi, XX,* 467–472 (1964). [Box 27.6]
Pope, A., 1733, *Essay on Man,* London [Epigraph to Chap. 24]
Porter, J. *See* Farnsworth *et al.* 1972.
Pound, R. V., and G. A. Rebka, 1960, "Apparent weight of Photons," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 4,* 337–341. [§§7.2, 7.4, 38.5, Fig. 38.1]
Pound, R. V., and J. L. Snider, 1964, "Effect of gravity on nuclear resonance," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 13,* 539–540. [§§7.2, 7.4]
Pound, R. V., and J. L. Snider, 1965, "Effect of gravity on gamma radiation," *Phys. Rev. B 140,* 788–803. [§§7.2, 38.5, Fig. 38.1]
Power, E. A., and J. A. Wheeler, 1957, "Thermal geons," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 29,* 480–495. [§25.6]
Prakash, A. *See* Newman *et al.* 1965.
Press, F., 1965, "Resonant vibrations of the Earth," *Sci. American 213,* no. 5, 28–37. [Ex. 37.14]
Press, F. *See also* Ahrens, Press, and Runcorn 1964.
Press, W. H., 1970, unpublished work described in part in Press and Thorne 1972. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2, Box 37.2]
Press, W. H., 1971, "Long wave trains of gravitational waves from a vibrating black hole," *Astrophys. J. Lett. 170,* 105–108. [Box 33.3]
Press, W. H., 1972, "Time evolution of a rotating black hole immersed in a static scalar field," *Astrophys. J. 175,* 243–252. [Ex. 33.14, Box 33.3]
Press, W. H. *See also* Bardeen and Press 1972, Bardeen, Press, and Teukolsky 1972, *and* Davis *et al.* 1971.
Press, W. H., and J. M. Bardeen, 1971, "Nonconservation of the Newman-Penrose conserved quantities," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 27,* 1303–1306. [Ex. 32.11]
Press, W. H., and S. A. Teukolsky, 1972, "Floating orbits, superradiant scattering and the black-hole bomb," *Nature 238,* 211–212. [Box 33.3]
Press, W. H., and S. A. Teukolsky, 1973, "Perturbations of a rotating black hole, II: Dynamical stability of the Kerr metric," *Astrophys. J.,* in press. [Box 33.3, Ex. 33.14]
Press, W. H., and K. S. Thorne, 1972, "Gravitational-wave astronomy," *Ann. Rev. Astron. Astrophys. 10,* 335–374. [§§36.5, 37.4, 37.8, Box 37.5]
Price, R. H., 1971, *Nonspherical Perturbations of Relativistic Gravitational Collapse,* doctoral dissertation, California Institute of Technology. [Ex. 32.10, Box 32.2]
Price, R. H., 1972a, "Nonspherical perturbations of relativistic gravitational collapse, I: Scalar and gravitational perturbations," *Phys. Rev., D5,* 2419–2438. [§§35.14, 41.11, Ex. 32.10, Box 32.2]
Price, R. H., 1972b, "Nonspherical perturbations of relativistic gravitational collapse, II: Integer-spin, zero-rest-mass fields," *Phys. Rev., D5,* 2439–2454. [§41.11, Box 32.2]
Price, R. H. *See also* Davis *et al.* 1971.
Pringle, J. E., and M. J. Rees, 1972, "Accretion disc models for compact X-ray sources," *Astron. Astrophys. 21,* 1–9. [Box 33.3]
Proclus of Athens, *cited by name in* Fig. 1.8.
Ptolemy, C. *See* Taliaferro 1952.
Ramsey, N. F., 1972, "History of atomic and molecular standards of frequency and time," *I.E.E.E. Trans. IM-21,* 90–98. [Box 16.3]
Rayleigh, Lord, 1912, "On the propagation of waves through a stratified medium, with special reference to the question of reflection," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 86,* 207–226. [§22.5]
Rayzer, Yu. P. *See* Zel'dovich and Rayzer 1967.
Reber, G., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Rebka, G. A. *See* Pound and Rebka 1960.
Rees, M. *See* Lynden-Bell and Rees 1971 *and* Pringle and Rees 1972.
Refsdal, S., 1964, "The gravitational lens effect," *Mon. Not. R. Astron. Soc. 128,* 295–306. [§25.6, Fig. 22.2, Box 33.3]
Refsdal, S., R. Stabell, and F. G. de Lange, 1967, "Numerical calculations on relativistic cosmological models," *Mem. Roy. Astron. Soc., 71,* 143–248. [§29.4, Box 29.4]
Regge, T., 1961, "General relativity without coordinates," *Nuovo Cimento 19,* 558–571. [§§42.1, 42.2, 42.4, 42.6]
Regge, T., and J. A. Wheeler, 1957, "Stability of a Schwarzschild singularity," *Phys. Rev. 108,* 1063–1069. [§25.5, Box 33.3]
Reichley, P. *See* Muhlemann and Reichley 1964 *and* 1965.
Reik, H. G. *See* Meixner and Reik 1959.
Reines, F., ed., 1972, *Cosmology, Fusion, and Other Matters,* Univ. of Colorado Press, Boulder.
Reissner, H., 1916, "Über die Eigengravitation des elektrischen Feldes nach der Einsteinschen Theorie," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 50,* 106–120. [Ex. 31.8]
Reissner, H., *cited by name in* §42.7.
Retherford, R. C. *See* Lamb and Retherford 1947.
Rhoades, C. E. J., 1971, *Investigations in the Physics of Neutron Stars,* doctoral dissertation, Princeton University. [§24.2]
Richelot, *cited by name in* Box 38.2.
Riemann, G. F. B., *achievements and picture in* Box 8.5; for collected works, see Weber 1953.
Riesz, M., 1949, "L'intégrale de Riemann-Liouville et le problème de Cauchy," *Acta Math. 81,* 1–223. [§35.8]
Rindler, W., 1969, *Essential Relativity: Special, General, and Cosmological,* Van Nostrand, New York. [Box 27.7]
Robb, A. A., 1914, *A Theory of Time and Space,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [Box 13.1]
Robb, A. A., 1936, *Geometry of Time and Space,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. Rev. ed. of Robb 1914. [Boxes 1.3, 13.1]

Robb, A. A., *quoted,* epigraph of Chap. 4.
Roberts, M. S., 1965, "21-cm. hydrogen measurements of NGC5668, a relatively distant galaxy," *Astrophys. J. 142,* 148–153. [§29.2]
Roberts, M. S. *See also* Dieter *et al.* 1962.
Robertson, H. P., 1935, "Kinematics and world structure," *Astrophys. J. 82,* 248–301. [Ex. 27.5]
Robertson, H. P., 1936, "Kinematics and world structure," *Astrophys. J. 83,* 187–201, 257–271. [Ex. 27.5]
Robertson, H. P., 1962, "Relativity and cosmology," in Deutsch and Klemperer 1962, pp. 228–235. [§§38.2, 39.3]
Robertson, H. P., *cited by name in* §30.3, Box 27.7.
Robertson, H. P., and T. W. Noonan, 1968, *Relativity and Cosmology,* W. B. Saunders, Philadelphia. [§27.11, Ex. 27.4, 29.6, endpapers]
Robinson, H. G. *See* Hughes, Robinson, and Beltran-Lopez 1960.
Robinson, I., 1959a, "A solution of the Maxwell-Einstein equations," *Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. 7,* 351–352. [Ex. 32.1]
Robinson, I., 1959b, unpublished report at *Colloque Internationale sur les Théories Relativistes de la Gravitation,* Abbaye de Royaumont. [Ex. 15.2]
Robinson, I., 1961, "Null Electromagnetic Fields," *J. Math. Phys., 2,* 290–291. [§22.5]
Robinson, I., A. Schild, and E. Schücking, eds., 1965, *Quasi-stellar Sources and Gravitational Collapse,* The University of Chicago Press, Chicago.
Robinson, I. *See also* Bondi, Pirani, and Robinson 1959, Douglas *et al.* 1969.
Rohrlich, F., 1965, *Classical Charged Particles; Foundations of Their Theory,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [§4.7]
Rohrlich, F., *cited by name in* §20.6.
Roll, P. G., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Dicke *et al.* 1965.
Roll, P. G., R. Krotkov, and R. H. Dicke, 1964, "The equivalence of inertial and passive gravitational mass," *Ann. Phys.* (*U.S.A.*) *26,* 442–517. [§§1.3, 10.1, 38.3, Fig. 1.6, Box 1.2]
Root, W. L. *See* Davenport and Root 1958.
Rose, R. D., H. M. Parker, R. A. Lowry, A. R. Kuhlthau, and J. W. Beams, 1969, "Determination of the gravitational constant *G, Phys. Rev. Lett. 23,* 655–658. [§40.8]
Rosen, Nathan, *Festschrift* on The occasion of his 60th birthday, March 22, 1969. *See* Kuper and Peres 1971.
Rosen, N. *See also* Peres and Rosen 1964.
Rosenfeld, L., 1940, "Sur le tenseur d'impulsion-énergie," *Mém. Acad. R. Belg. Sci. 18,* no. 6. [§21.3]
Rosenfeld, L. *See also* Bohr and Rosenfeld 1933.
Rossi, B., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Rossi, B., and D. B. Hall, 1941, "Variation of the rate of decay of mesotrons with momentum," *Phys. Rev. 59,* 223–228. [§38.4]
Royaumont 1959, *Les Théories relativistes de la gravitation,* Actes du Colloque International, organizé à Royaumont, du 21 au 27 juin 1959, Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique, Paris, 1962.
Ruark, A. E., and H. C. Urey, 1930, *Atoms, Molecules, and Quanta,* McGraw-Hill, New York. [§§40.7, 41.4]
Rudenko, V. N. *See* Braginsky, Zel'dovich, and Rudenko 1969.
Ruderman, M., 1972, "Pulsars: Structure and dynamics," *Ann. Rev. Astron. Astrophys. 10,* 427–476. [§24.3]
Ruffini, R. *See* Christodolou and Ruffini 1971; Davis *et al.* 1971; Ferrari and Ruffini 1969; *and* Hanni and Ruffini 1973.
Ruffini, R., and J. A. Wheeler, 1970, "Collapse of wave to black hole," *Bull. Am. Phys. Soc. 15,* 76. [§35.8]
Ruffini, R., and J. A. Wheeler, 1971a, "Introducing the black hole," *Phys. Today 24,* 30–36. [§33.7]
Ruffini, R., and J. A. Wheeler, 1971b, "Relativistic cosmology and space platforms," in *Proceedings of the Conference on Space Physics,* European Space Research Organization, Paris, France, pp. 45–174. [Boxes 33.2, 33.3, 33.5, 36.3, Fig. 24.3, Ex. 37.13, 37.14]
Runcorn, S. K. *See* Ahrens, Press, and Runcorn 1964.
Runge, J. *See* Sommerfeld and Runge 1911.
Russ, N. *See* Boni, Russ, and Laurence 1960.
Rutherford, E., *cited by name in* Preface, §44.1.
Ruzmaikin, A. A. *See* Ruzmaikina and Ruzmaikin 1969.
Ruzmaikina, T. V., and A. A. Ruzmaikin, 1969, "Quadratic corrections to the Lagrangian density of the gravitational field and the singularity," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. 57,* 680–685. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 30,* 372–374. [Box 17.2 part 6]
Ryan, M. P., Jr., 1971, "Qualitative cosmology: Diagrammatic solutions for Bianchi type IX universes with expansion, rotation, and shear, II: The general case," *Ann. Phys. 68,* 541–555. [§30.7]
Ryan, M. P., Jr., 1972a, *Hamiltonian Cosmology,* Springer, Berlin, Germany. [§30.7, Box 30.1]
Ryan, M. P., Jr., 1972b, "The oscillatory regime near the singularity in Bianchi type-IX universes," *Ann. Phys.* (*U.S.A.*) *70,* 301–322. (Includes a report of work by V. A. Belinsky and I. M. Khalatnikov. [§30.7, Box 30.1]
Sachs, R. K., 1961, "Gravitational waves in general relativity, VI: The outgoing radiation condition," *Proc. R. Soc. London A 264,* 309–338. [§22.5]
Sachs, R. K., 1964, "Gravitational radiation," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964. [§§21.5, 21.13, 33.6, 41.11, Ex. 22.14, endpapers]
Sachs, R. K., ed., 1971, *General Relativity and Cosmology,* proceedings of course 47 of the International School of Physics "Enrico Fermi", Academic Press. [§§27.2, 34.1, 40.7]
Sachs, R. K. *See also* Eardley, Liang, and Sachs 1972, Ehlers, Geren, and Sachs 1968, *and* Jordan, Ehlers, and Sachs 1961.
Sakharov, A. D., 1967, "Vacuum quantum fluctuations in curved space and the theory of gravitation," *Doklady Akad. Nauk S.S.S.R. 177,* 70–71. English translation in *Sov. Phys. Doklady 12,* 1040–1041 (1968). [§44.4, Box 17.2 part 6]
Sakharov, A. D., 1969, unpublished work cited by Braginsky and Nazarenko 1971. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]
Salam, A., and E. P. Wigner, eds., 1972, *Aspects of Quantum Theory,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng.
Salpeter, E. E. and R. V. Wagoner, 1971, "Structure of relativistic disks," *Astrophys. J. 164,* 557–568. [Box 24.1]

Sandage, A., 1958, "Current problems in the extragalactic distance scale," *Astrophys. J. 127,* 513–526. [Box 27.1]

Sandage, A., 1968, "The time scale for creation," in L. Woltjer, ed., *Galaxies and the Universe,* Columbia Univ. Press, New York, pp. 75–112. [§29.7]

Sandage, A., 1970, "Main-sequence photometry, color-magnitude diagrams, and ages for the globular clusters M3, M13, M15, and M92," *Astrophys. J. 162,* 841–870. [§29.7]

Sandage, A., 1972a, "Distances to galaxies: the Hubble constant, the Friedmann time, and the edge of the world," in *Proceedings of the Symposium on the Galaxy and the Distance Scale,* Essex, England, in press. [§§27.1, 29.3, 29.4, Box 29.4]

Sandage, A., 1972b, "The redshift-distance relation, I. Angular diameter of first-ranked cluster galaxies as a function of redshift: the aperture correction to magnitudes," *Astrophys. J. 173,* 485–500. [§29.5, Box 29.4]

Sandage, A., 1972c, "The redshift-distance relation, II. The Hubble diagram and its scatter for first-ranked cluster galaxies: a formal value for q_o," *Astrophys. J. 178,* 1–24. [§29.4, Box 29.4]

Sandage, A., 1972d, "The redshift-distance relation, III. Photometry and the Hubble diagram for radio sources and the possible turn-on time for QSO's," *Astrophys. J. 178,* 25–44. [§29.4, Boxes 28.1, 29.4]

Sandage, A., *cited by name in* Boxes 27.7, 29.5.

Sandage, A., G. A. Tamman, and E. Hardy, 1972, "Limits on the local deviation of the universe from a homogeneous model," *Astrophys. J. 172,* 253–263. [§27.1]

Sanders, R., 1970, "The effects of stellar collisions in dense stellar systems," *Astrophys. J. 162,* 791–809. [§§24.5, 24.6, Box 33.3]

Sanderson, B. J. *See* Hsiang and Sanderson 1965.

Sands, M. *See* Feynman, Leighton, and Sands 1964.

Sard, R. D., 1970, *Relativistic Mechanics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§2.10]

Sargent, W. L. W. *See* Bahcall, Sargent, and Schmidt 1967.

Schäfke, F. W. *See* Meixner and Schäfke 1954.

Schatzman, E. *See* DeWitt, Veron, and Schatzman 1967.

Schiff, L. I., 1962, "General relativity: Theory and experiment," *J. Indust. & Appl. Math 10,* 795–801. [§§38.2, 39.3]

Schiff, L. I., 1967, "Comparison of theory and observation in general relativity," in Ehlers 1967. [§§38.2, 39.3]

Schiffer, M. *See* Adler, Bazin, and Schiffer 1965.

Schild, A., 1960, "Time," *Texas Quarterly, 3,* no. 3, 42–62. [§7.3]

Schild, A., 1962, "Gravitational theories of the Whitehead type and the principle of equivalence," in Møller 1962. [§§7.3, 38.5]

Schild, A., 1967, "Lectures on General Relativity Theory," in Ehlers 1967, pp. 1–105. [§7.3, endpapers]

Schild, A., 1970, "Tearing geometry to pieces: More on conformal geometry," unpublished lecture at Jan. 19 Princeton University relativity seminar. [Box 10.2]

Schild, A., *cited by name in* §10.3, Box 17.3, Ex. 10.6. *See also* Douglas *et al.* 1969, Ehlers, Pirani, and Schild 1972, Infeld and Schild 1949, Kerr and Schild 1965, *and* Robinson, Schild, and Schücking 1965.

Schilpp, P. A., ed., 1949, *Albert Einstein: Philosopher-Scientist,* Library of Living Philosophers, Evanston, Ill.; source of quotations from A. Einstein, K. Menger, and M. von Laue. [Box 1.11, epigraphs to §1.2, Chaps. 2, 9]

Schmidt, B. G., 1971, "A new definition of singular points in general relativity," *Gen. Rel. Grav. 1,* 269–280. [§34.6]

Schmidt, M., 1972, "Statistical studies of the evolution of extragalactic radio sources, I. Quasars," *Astrophys. J. 176,* 273–287. [Box 28.1]

Schmidt, M. *Cited by name in* Box 27.7, Ex. 29.7. *See also* Bahcall, Sargent, and Schmidt 1967 *and* Bahcall and Schmidt 1967.

Schoch, C. *See* Neugebauer and Schoch 1930.

Schouten, J. A., 1954, *Ricci-calculus,* Springer, Berlin, Germany. [§21.5, Ex. 17.8, 21.8, endpapers]

Schramm, D. N. *See* Wasserburg, Schramm, and Huneke 1969.

Schrödinger, E., 1950, *Space-Time Structure,* Cambridge Univ. Press, England. [endpapers]

Schücking, E. *See also* Douglas *et al.* 1969 *and* Robinson, Schild, and Schücking 1965.

Schücking, E., and O. Heckmann, 1958, "World models," in *Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay,* Éditions Stoops, Brussels, pp. 149–158. [§§30.2, 30.3]

Schutz, B., *cited by name in* Ex. 35.20.

Schutz, S., 1966, statement in January 1966 final examination in course in relativity, Princeton University. [Epigraph to Chap. 16]

Schwartz, J. T. *See* Dunford and Schwartz 1958.

Schwartz, L., 1950–1951, *Théorie des distributions,* vols. 1 and 2, Hermann, Paris. [§4.7]

Schwarzschild, K., 1916a, "Über das Gravitationsfeld eines Massenpunktes nach der Einsteinschen Theorie," *Sitzber. Deut. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Kl. Math.-Phys. Tech.,* 189–196. [Preface, §§14.1, 23.6]

Schwarzschild, K., 1916b, "Über das Gravitationsfeld einer Kugel aus inkompressibler Flussigkeit nach der Einsteinschen Theorie," *Sitzber. Deut. Akad. Wiss. Berlin, Kl. Math.-Phys. Tech.,* 424–434. [§23.2, Box 23.2]

Schwarzschild, K., *cited by name in* §§42.1, 42.7.

Schwinger, J., 1948, "Quantum electrodynamics, I: A covariant formulation," *Phys. Rev. 74,* 1439–1461. [Box 15.1]

Schwinger, J., ed., 1958, *Selected Papers on Quantum Electrodynamics,* Dover, New York.

Schwinger, J., 1963a, "Energy and momentum density in field theory," *Phys. Rev. 130,* 800–805. [Ex. 40.8]

Schwinger, J., 1963b, "Quantized gravitational field," *Phys. Rev. 130,* 1253–1258. [Ex. 40.8]

Sciama, D. W., 1957, "Inertia," *Sci. American 196,* no. 2, 99–109. [§21.12]

Sciama, D. W., 1961, *The Unity of the Universe,* Anchor, New York. [§21.12]

Sciama, D. W., 1971, *Modern Cosmology,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§28.1, Box 27.7]

Sciama, D. W., *cited by name in* Boxes 34.2, 34.3.

Scott, P. F., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Hewish *et al.* 1968.

Sears, F. W., 1953, *An Introduction to Thermodynamics, the Kinetic Theory of Gases, and Statistical Mechanics,* Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass. [§23.4]

Seattle 1967, Battelles Rencontres. *See* DeWitt and Wheeler 1968.
Seckler, B. D. *See* Keller, Lewis, and Seckler 1956.
Seelig, C., ed., 1956. *See* Kollros 1956.
Seielstad, G. A., R. A. Sramek, and K. W. Weiler, 1970, "Measurement of the deflection of 9.602-GHz radiation from 3C279 in the solar gravitational field," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 24,* 1373–1376. [Box 40.1]
Sejnowski, T. J., 1973, personal communication. [Ex. 15.2]
Shakespeare, W., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.
Shakura, N. I., and R. A. Sunyaev, 1973, "Black holes in binary systems: Observational appearance," *Astron. Astrophys. 24,* 337–355. [Box 33.3]
Shannon, C., 1938, "A symbolic analysis of relay and switching circuits," *Trans. Am. Inst. Elect. Eng. 57,* 713–723. [§44.5]
Shapiro, I. I., 1964, "Fourth test of general relativity," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 13,* 789–791. [§40.4]
Shapiro, I. I., 1967, "New method for the detection of light deflection by solar gravity," *Science 157,* 806–808. [§40.3]
Shapiro, I. I., 1968, "Fourth test of general relativity: preliminary results," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 20,* 1265–1269. [§40.4, Box 40.2]
Shapiro, I. I., 1970, results reported at Third Cambridge Conference on Experimental Relativity, New York City, June 1970. [Box 40.3]
Shapiro, I. I., 1971a. "Testing general relativity: progress, problems, and prospects," in Davies, 1971, pp. 136–147. [Box 40.3]
Shapiro, I. I., 1971b. "Testing general relativity: progress, problems, and prospects," lecture at Sixth International Conference on Gravitation and Relativity, published by NORDITA (Copenhagen) in multilith form for distribution at conference, also published in *Gen. Rel. Grav. 3,* 135–148 (1972). [§39.3, Box 40.3]
Shapiro, I. I., M. E. Ash, D. B. Campbell, R. B. Dyce, R. P. Ingalls, R. F. Jurgens, and G. H. Pettengill, 1971, "Fourth test of general relativity: New radar result," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 26,* 1132–1135. [Box 40.2]
Shapiro, I. I., W. B. Smith, M. E. Ash, R. P. Ingalls, and G. H. Pettengill, 1971, "Gravitational constant: Experimental bound on its time variation," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 26,* 27–30. [§40.8]
Shapiro, I. I., G. H. Pettengill, M. E. Ash, R. P. Ingalls, D. B. Campbell, and R. B. Dyce, 1972, "Mercury's perihelion advance: determination by radar," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 28,* 1594–1597. [Box 40.3]
Shapley, H., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Sharp, D. H., 1960, "One- and two-surface formulations of the boundary-value problem for Einstein-Maxwell theory and for 'already unified' field theory," Physics A. B. senior thesis, Princeton University, unpublished; deposited in Fine Library, Princeton University. [§21.9]
Sharp, D. H., *cited by name in* §21.1. *See also* Baierlein, Sharp, and Wheeler 1962, Hartle and Sharp 1965, *and* Misner and Sharp 1964.
Sheldon, S. E., 1971, "A complete redshift-magnitude formula," *Astron. J. 76,* 751–755. [§29.4]
Shelest, V. P., ed., 1972, *Gravitatsiya: Problemi i Perspektivi: pamyati Alekseya Zinovievicha Petrova posvashaetsya,* Naukova Dumka, Kiev.
Shields, M. C. *See* Boni, Russ, and Laurence 1960.
Shimmins, A. J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Shirkov, D. V. *See* Bogoliubov, N. N.
Shu, F. H. *See* Lin, Mestel, and Shu 1965.
Siegel, C. L., 1956, *Vorlesungen über Himmelsmechanik,* Springer, Berlin. [Box 25.4]
Siegel, C. L., and J. K. Moser, 1971, *Lectures on Classical Mechanics,* translated by C. I. Kalme, Springer, Berlin and New York, 1971. [Box 25.4]
Silverberg, E. C. *See* Bender *et al.* 1971.
Simpson, O. C. *See* Estermann, Simpson, and Stern 1938.
Singer, D. W., 1950, *Giordano Bruno, His Life and Thought with Annotated Translation of His Work, On the Infinite Universe and Worlds,* Abelard-Schuman, New York. [Box 27.7]
Slee, O. B., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Slipher, V. M., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Smith, J. H. *See* Frisch and Smith 1963.
Smith, W. B. *See* Shapiro, Smith *et al.* 1971.
Snider, J. L. *See* Pound and Snider 1964 *and* 1965.
Snyder, H. *See* Oppenheimer and Snyder 1939.
Söding, P., J. Bartels, A. Barbaro-Galtieri, J. E. Enstrom, T. A. Lasinski, A. Rittenberg, A. H. Rosenfeld, T. G. Trippe, N. Barash-Schmidt, C. Bricman, V. Chaloupka, and M. Roos, 1972, "Review of particle properties," *Physics Letters, 39B,* 13. [endpapers]
Solvay 1958, Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay, held at the Instituts Solvay, Brussels; proceedings: *La Structure et l'evolution de l'univers,* Éditions Stoops, Brussels, Belgium.
Sommerfeld, A., and J. Runge, 1911, "Anwendung der Vektorrechnung auf die Grundlagen der geometrischen Optik," *Ann. Phys. (Germany) 35,* 277–298. [§22.5]
Spencer, D. C. *See* Nickerson, Spencer, and Steenrod 1959.
Spitzer, L., Jr., 1971, "Dynamical evolution of dense spherical star systems," in *Semaine d'étude sur les noyeaux des galaxies 1970 (Pontificae Academiae Scientarum Scripta Varia no. 35).* [§§24.5, 24.6, Box 33.3]
Spivak, M., 1965, *Calculus on Manifolds,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§4.1, Box 4.1]
Sramek, R. A., 1971, "A measurement of the gravitational deflection of microwave radiation near the sun, 1970 October," *Astrophys. J. Lett. 167,* L55–L60. [Box 40.1]
Sramek, R. A. *See also* Seielstad, Sramek, and Weiler 1970.
St. Patrick. *See* Stokes 1887.
Stabell, R. *See* Refsdal, Stabell, and de Lange 1967.
Stanley, G. J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.
Starobinsky, A. A. *See* Zel'dovich and Starobinsky 1971.
Steenrod, N. E. *See* Nickerson, Spencer, and Steenrod 1959.
Stehle, P. *See* Corben and Stehle 1960.
Steigman, G., 1971, "Antimatter and cosmology," in Sachs 1971, pp. 373–382. [§§27.11, 28.4]
Stephenson, F. R., *contributed* Fig. 1.8.
Stern, O. *See* Estermann, Simpson, and Stern 1938.
Sternberg, S., 1969, *Celestial Mechanics,* W. A. Benjamin, New York. [§8.2]
Steuckelberg, E. C. G., and G. Wanders, 1953, "Thermodynamique en relativité général," *Helv. Phys. Act., 26,* 307–316. [§22.2]
Stewart, J. M., 1971, *Non-Equilibrium Relativistic Kinetic Theory,* lecture notes in Physics 10, Springer-Verlag, Berlin. [§22.6, Ex. 22.7]

Stewart, J. M., *cited by name in* §22.3.

Stewart, J. M., and G. F. R. Ellis, 1968, "Solutions of Einstein's equations for a fluid which exhibits local rotational symmetry," *J. Math. Phys. 9,* 1072–1082. [Ex. 32.1]

Stockton, A. N., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Stokes, G. C., *cited by name in* Box 4.6.

Stokes, W., 1887, *The Tripartite Life of St. Patrick With Other Documents Relating to That Saint,* Her Majesty's Stationery Office, London. [§19.4]

Stratimyer, H., *cited by name in* Box 16.3.

Struve, F. G. W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Sunyaev, R. A. *See* Shakura and Sunyaev 1973.

Susskind, L. *See* Aharonov and Susskind 1967.

Symanzik, K., 1963, "Aspects of Euclidean field theory and Feynman path integrals," in Lurie and Mukunda 1963. [Box 21.1]

Synge, J. L., 1950, "The gravitational field of a particle," *Proc. R. Irish Acad. A 53,* 83–114. [§31.5, Box 31.1]

Synge, J. L., 1960a, "On certain identities connected with the Einstein tensor," *Proc. R. Irish Acad. A 61,* 29–36. [Ex. 35.14]

Synge, J. L., 1960b, *Relativity: The General Theory,* North-Holland, Amsterdam. [endpapers]

Synge, J. L., 1962, "Tensorial integral conservation laws in general relativity," in CNRS 1962, pp. 75–83. [Box 15.3]

Synge, John Lighton, *Festschrift* on the occasion of his 75th birthday, March 23, 1972. *See* O'Raifeartaigh 1972.

Szekeres, G., 1960, "On the singularities of a Riemannian manifold," *Publ. Mat. Debrecen 7,* 285–301. [§31.4, Box 31.1]

Taliaferro, R. C., trans. 1952, *Ptolemy, The Almagest,* in *Great Books of the Western World,* Encyclopedia Brittanica, Inc., Chicago, Ill., Volume 16. [Box 27.7]

Tamman, G. A., *cited by name in* Box 29.4. *See also* Sandage, Tamman, and Hardy 1972.

Tannenbaum, M. *See* Farley *et al.* 1966.

Tartaglia, N. F., 1560, *General Trattato dei Numeri et Misure,* Cited in *Enzyklopädie der Mathematischen Wissenschaften,* vol. III, part i, p. 1056, Leipzig 1914. [Box 13.1]

Taub, A. H., 1948, "Relativistic Rankine-Hugonoit equations," *Phys. Rev., 74,* 328–334. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

Taub, A. H., 1965, "Equations of motion of test particles," in London 1965. [§40.9]

Taub, A. H., 1971, "Relativistic Hydrodynamics," *Studies in Applied Mathematics—Math. Assoc. Amer. Studies in Math. 7,* 150–180. [§22.3]

Taub, A. H. *See also* Misner and Taub 1968.

Tauber, G. E., and J. W. Weinberg, 1961, "Internal state of a gravitating gas," *Phys. Rev. 122,* 1342–1365. [§22.6]

Taylor, D. J., *cited by name in* Box 34.3. See also Cocke and Taylor 1969.

Taylor, E. F., and J. A. Wheeler, 1966, *Spacetime Physics,* W. H. Freeman, San Francisco, Calif. [§2.1, Fig. 2.7, Ex. 6.9]

Tbilisi, USSR, 1968. Fifth International Conference on Gravitation and the Theory of Relativity, Tbilisi State University, August 1968. *See* Fock 1968.

Technion 1969, *International Seminar on Relativity and Gravitation* held at Technion City, Israel, in July 1969, in honor of the 60th birthday of Professor Nathan Rosen. *See* Kuper and Peres 1971.

Teitelboim, C., 1970, "Splitting of the Maxwell tensor: radiation reaction without advanced fields," *Phys. Rev. D 1,* 1572–1582. [§20.6, Ex. 20.8]

Teitelboim, C., 1971, "Radiation reaction as a retarded self-interaction," *Phys. Rev. D 4,* 345–347. [§20.6]

Teitelboim, C., 1972a, "Nonmeasurability of the baryon number of a black hole," *Nuovo Cimento Lett., II, no. 3,* 326–328. [Box 25.2, Boxes 32.2, 33.1]

Teitelboim, C., 1972b, "Nonmeasurability of the lepton number of a black hole," *Nuovo Cimento, II 3,* 397–400. [Boxes 25.2, 33.1]

Teitelboim, C., 1972c, "Nonmeasurability of the Quantum Numbers of a Black Hole," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 2941–2954 [Boxes 25.2, 32.2, 33.1]

Teitelboim, C., *cited by name in* §21.1, Fig. 4.6.

Teller, E., 1948, "On the change of physical constants," *Phys. Rev. 73,* 801–802. [§38.6]

Teller, E., *cited by name in* Box 38.2. *See also* De Hoffman and Teller 1950.

Tempier, É., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Teukolsky, S. A., 1972. "Rotating black holes: Separable wave equations for gravitational and electromagnetic perturbations," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 29,* 1114–1118. [§41.11, Box 33.3, Ex. 33.14]

Teukolsky, S. A., 1973, "Perturbations of a rotating black hole, I: Fundamental equations for gravitational, electromagnetic, and neutrino-field perturbations," *Astrophys. J.,* in press. [Ex. 33.14]

Teukolsky, S. A. *See also* Bardeen, Press, and Teukolsky 1972 *and* Press and Teukolsky 1972 *and* 1973.

Texas Symposia on Relativistic Astrophysics: 1963, *see* Robinson, Schild, and Schücking 1965 *and* Harrison *et al.* 1965; 1964, *see* Douglas *et al.* 1969; 1972, *see Trans. N.Y. Acad. Sci.*

Thirring, H., 1918, "Über die Wirkung rotierender ferner Massen in der Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie," *Phys. Z. 19,* 33–39. [§21.12]

Thirring, H., 1921, "Berichtigung zu meiner Arbeit: "Über die Wirkung rotierender ferner Massen in der Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie," *Phys. A. 22,* 29–30. [§21.12]

Thirring, H., and J. Lense, 1918, "Über den Einfluss der Eigenrotation der Zentralkörper auf die Bewegung der Planeten und Monde nach der Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie," *Phys. Z. 19,* 156–163. [§§21.12, 40.7]

Thirring, W. E., 1961, "An alternative approach to the theory of gravitation," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 16,* 96–117. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Thomas, L. H., 1927, "The kinematics of an electron with an axis," *Phil. Mag. 3,* 1–22. [§§40.7, 41.4, Ex. 6.9]

Thomson, A. *See* Farnsworth *et al.* 1972.

Thomson, J. J., 1907, *Electricity and Matter,* Archibald Constable, London, Chapter III. [Fig. 4.6]

Thomson, J. J., *cited by name in* Fig. 4.6.

Thomson, W., Lord Kelvin, 1889, *Popular Lectures and Addresses, Vol. I,* Macmillan, London. [Epigraph to Chap. 37]

Thomson, W., Lord Kelvin, 1904, *Baltimore Lectures on Mo-*

lecular Dynamics and the Wave Theory of Light, C. J. Clay, London. [Preface]

Thomson, W., Lord Kelvin, *cited by name in* Box 17.2, *quoted in* epigraph of Chap. 20.

Thorne, K. S., 1967, "The general relativistic theory of stellar structure and dynamics," in DeWitt, Schatzman, and Veron 1967, pp. 259–441. [§24.4, endpapers]

Thorne, K. S., 1969a, "Nonradial pulsation of general-relativistic stellar models, III: Analytic and numerical results for neutron stars," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 1–16. [§24.3, Box 36.1]

Thorne, K. S., 1969b, "Nonradial pulsation of general-relativistic stellar models, IV: The weak-field limit," *Astrophys. J. 158,* 997–1019. [§36.8, Box 36.1]

Thorne, K. S., 1971, "Relativistic stars, black holes, and gravitational waves," in Sachs 1971, pp. 238–283. [§40.7]

Thorne, K. S., 1972, "Nonspherical gravitational collapse, a short review," in Klauder 1972, pp. 231–258. [Box 32.3, Ex. 32.10]

Thorne, K. S., 1973a. "Relativistic shocks: The Taub adiabat," *Astrophys. J. 179,* 897–907. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

Thorne, K. S., 1973b, "Black-hole models for compact x-ray sources," *Astrophys. J.,* in press. [Box 33.3]

Thorne, K. S. *See also* Ames and Thorne 1968, Bardeen, Thorne, and Meltzer 1966, Bisnovatyi-Kogan and Thorne 1970, Fackerell, Ipser, and Thorne 1969, Fletcher *et al.* 1967, Harrison *et al.* 1965, Hartle and Thorne 1968 *and* 1974, Ipser and Thorne 1968, Meltzer and Thorne 1966, Morgan and Thorne 1973, Novikov and Thorne 1973, Press and Thorne 1972, *and* Trimble and Thorne 1969.

Thorne, K. S., W. T. Ni, and C. M. Will, 1971, "Theoretical frameworks for testing relativistic gravity: A review," in Davies 1971, pp. 10–31. [§17.6, Box 39.5]

Thorne, K. S., and C. M. Will, 1971, "Theoretical frameworks for texting relativistic gravity, I: Foundations," *Astrophys. J. 163,* 595–610. [§§38.2, 39.2]

Tikhonov, M. Yu. *See* Braginsky, Manukin, and Tikhonov 1970.

Tobey, R. G., *et al.* 1967, *PL/1 Formac Interpreter, Users Reference Manual* IBM Controlled Program Library 360D 03.3004, Hawthorne, N.Y. [Box 14.3]

Tolman, R. C., 1934a, *Relativity, Thermodynamics, and Cosmology,* Clarendon Press, Oxford. [§44.1, Ex. 22.7, endpapers]

Tolman, R. C., 1934b, "Effect of inhomogeneity on cosmological models," *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S. 20,* 169–176. [§30.6, Ex. 32.8]

Tolman, R. C., 1939, "Static solutions of Einstein's field equations for spheres of fluid," *Phys. Rev. 55,* 364–373. [§23.2, Ex. 23.9]

Tomonaga, S., 1946, "On a relativistically invariant formulation of the quantum theory of wave fields," *Prog. Theor. Phys. 1,* 27–42, reprinted in Schwinger 1958. [Boxes 15.1, 21.1, Ex. 43.5]

Tonnelat, M. A., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Torrence, R. J. *See* Couch *et al.* 1968 *and* Newman *et al.* 1965.

Trautman, A., 1965, "Foundations and current problems of general relativity theory," in Trautman, Pirani, and Bondi 1965. [§12.1, Boxes 8.1, 12.4, endpapers]

Trautman, A., 1972, "On the Einstein-Cartan equations, I," *Bulletin de l'Academie Polonaise des Sciences (math., astr., phys.) 20,* 185–190. [§§38.2, 39.2]

Trautman, A., F. A. E. Pirani, and H. Bondi, 1965, *Lectures on General Relativity,* Brandeis 1964 Summer Institute on Theoretical Physics, vol. I, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N.J.

Treder, H. J., 1962, *Gravitative Stosswellen, Nichtanalytischen Wellenlösungen der Einsteinschen Gravitationsgleichungen,* Akademie-Verlag, Berlin. [§21.13]

Treder, H. J. *See also* Papapetrou and Treder 1959 *and* 1962.

Trimble, V. L., and K. S. Thorne, 1969, "Spectroscopic binaries and collapsed stars," *Astrophys. J. 156,* 1013–1019. [Box 33.3]

Trumpler, R. J. *See* Campbell and Trumpler 1928.

Truran, J. *See* Cameron and Truran 1971.

Truran, J., and A. G. W. Cameron, 1971, "Evolutionary models of nucleosynthesis in the galaxy," *Astrophys. & Space Sci. 14,* 179–222. [Box 33.3]

Tukey, J. W. *See* Blackman and Tukey 1959.

Turkevich, A. *See* Fermi and Turkevich 1950.

Turner, K. C., and H. A. Hill, 1964, "New experimental limit on velocity-dependent interactions of clocks and distant matter," *Phys. Rev. B 134,* 252–256. [§38.7, Fig. 38.3]

Tyson, J. A., *cited by name in* Ex. 37.13. *See also* Douglass and Tyson 1971.

Ulam, S. *See* Kac and Ulam 1968.

Unruh, W. G., 1971, "Dirac particles and geometrodynamical charge in curved geometries," doctoral dissertation, physics, Princeton University. [§21.9]

Unt, V., and P. Keres, 1972. "Tails of waves in the Schwarzschild field" (in Russian), *Izv. Akad Nauk Estonian S.S.R., Fiz. Mat., 21,* 17–30. [§35.14]

Urey, H. C. *See* Ruark and Urey 1930.

Van de Kamp, P., 1958, "Visual binaries," *Ann. Phys. (U.S.A.) 50,* 187–224. [Box 36.3]

Van der Waerden, B. L., 1967, *Sources of Quantum Mechanics,* North-Holland, Amsterdam, Holland. Reprinted in 1968 by Dover, New York.

Varenna, International School of Physics "Enrico Fermi," organized at Varenna on Lake Como by the Italian Physical Society; 1961, *see* Møller 1962; 1965, *see* Gratton 1966; 1969, *see* Sachs 1971; 1972, *see* Bertotti 1973.

Vatican 1970, Study Week on the Nuclei of Galaxies, April 13–18, 1970, at the Vatican; proceedings published in *Semain d'etude sur les noyeaux des galaxies, Pontificae Academiae Scientarum Script Varia no. 35,* 1971.

Veblen, O., and J. H. C. Whitehead, 1932, *The Foundations of Differential Geometry,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. Reprinted 1953. [§2.2]

Veron, P. *See* DeWitt, Schatzman, and Veron 1967.

Vishveshwara, C. V., 1970, "Stability of the Schwarzschild Metric," *Phys. Rev. D 1,* 2870–2879. [Box 33.3]

Volkoff, G. *See* Oppenheimer and Volkoff 1939.

Voltaire, François Marie Arouet de, 1738, *Éléments de Philosophie de Newton,* Pt. 3, chap. III; reprinted in vol. 5 of *Oevres de Voltaire,* Bacquenois, Paris, 1836. [epigraph to §1.1]

von Karman, T., *cited by name in* Box 38.2.

von Klüber, H., 1960, "The determination of Einstein's light deflection in the gravitational field of the sun," in Beer 1960, pp. 47–77. [Box 40.1]

von Oppolzer, T. R., 1887, "Canon der Finsternisse," *Sitzber. Kais. Akad. Wiss. Wien Math.—Nat. Kl. 52,* i-xviii, 1–321. [Fig. 1.8]

von Neumann, J., *cited by name in* Box 38.2.

Vourloumis, Hypatia, 1971, statement made at Knossos, May 1971, while serving as guide on Swan's Hellenic tour. *Quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Vyasa, about 400 A.D., *The Mahabharata,* translated from the Sanskrit by P. Lal, Writers Workshop, Calcutta. [Epigraph to §1.5]

Waage, H., *cited by name in* Fig. 1.7.

Wagoner, R. V., 1967, "Some effects of an intervening galaxy on the radiation from very distant objects," *Astrophys. J. 149,* 465–480. [Ex. 29.8]

Wagoner, R. V., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Bardeen and Wagoner 1971 *and* Salpeter and Wagoner 1971.

Wagoner, R. V., W. A. Fowler, and F. Hoyle, 1967, "On the synthesis of elements at very high temperatures," *Astrophys. J. 148,* 3–49. [§28.1]

Wakano, M. *See* Harrison *et al.* 1965 *and* Klauder *et al.* 1959.

Wald, R. M., 1971. *See* Cohen and Wald 1971.

Walker, A. G., 1932, "Relative coordinates," *Proc. R. Soc. Edinburgh 52,* 345–353. [§6.3]

Walker, A. G., 1936, "On Milne's theory of world-structure," *Proc. London Math. Soc. 42,* 90–127. [Ex. 27.5]

Walker, A. G. *cited by name in* §30.3, Box 27.7.

Walker, M., and R. Penrose, 1970, "On quadratic first integrals of the geodesic equations for type [22] spacetimes," *Commun. Math. Phys. 18,* 265–274. [§§33.4, 33.5]

Walker, R. *See* Mathews and Walker 1965.

Wallace, A. H., 1957, *An Introduction to Algebraic Topology,* Pergamon, London. [Box 34.1]

Walraven, Th. *See* Ledoux and Walraven 1958.

Wampler, E. J., *cited by name in* Box 27.7.

Wanders, G. *See* Steuckelberg and Wanders 1953.

Ward, W., 1970, "General-relativistic light deflection for the complete celestial sphere," *Astrophys. J. 162,* 345–348. [§40.3]

Warrington, J., trans. 1956, *Aristotle's Metaphysics,* E. P. Dutton, New York. [Box 27.7]

Wasserburg, G. J. *See* Papanastassiou and Wasserburg 1969.

Wasserburg, G. J., and D. S. Burnett, 1968, "The status of isotopic age determinations on iron and stone meteorites," in P. M. Millman, ed., *Meteorite Research,* Reidel, Dordrecht, Holland, pp. 467–479. [§29.7, Box 29.3]

Wasserburg, G. J., D. N. Schramm, and J. C. Huneke, 1969, "Nuclear chronologies for the galaxy," *Astrophys. J. 157,* L91–L96. [§29.7]

Weber, H., ed., 1953, *B. Riemann: Gesammelte Mathematische Werke,* 2d ed., paperback reprint, Dover, New York. The *Habilitationsvorlesung* of 1854 was translated into English by W. K. Clifford, *Nature, 8,* 14 (1873). [Box 8.5]

Weber, J., 1960, "Detection and generation of gravitational waves," *Phys. Rev. 117,* 307–313. [§37.3]

Weber, J., 1961, *General Relativity and Gravitational Waves,* Wiley-Interscience, New York. [§37.3, endpapers]

Weber, J., 1967, "Gravitational radiation," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 18,* 498–501. [§37.3, Fig. 37.2]

Weber, J., 1969, "Evidence for discovery of gravitational radiation," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 22,* 1320–1324. [§§37.3, 37.10, Fig. 37.2]

Weber, J., 1970a, "Gravitational radiation experiments," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 24,* 276–279. [§§37.3, 37.10]

Weber, J., 1970b, "Anisotropy and polarization in the gravitational-radiation experiments," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 25,* 180–184. [§§37.3, 37.10]

Weber, J., *cited by name in* Preface, Box 17.3.

Weil, A. *See* Allendoerfer and Weil 1943.

Weiler, K. W. *See* Seielstad, Sramek, and Weiler 1970.

Weinberg, J. W. *See* Tauber and Weinberg 1961.

Weinberg, S., 1965, "Photons and gravitons in perturbation theory: Derivation of Maxwell's and Einstein's equations," *Phys. Rev. B 138,* 988–1002. [§§7.1, 18.1]

Weinberg, S., 1972, *Gravitation and Cosmology: Principles and Applications of the General Theory of Relativity,* Wiley, New York. [endpapers]

Weingarten, J., *cited by name in* §21.5.

Weisskopf, V. F. *See* Blatt and Weisskopf 1952 *and* Fierz and Weisskopf 1960.

Wells, J. S. *See* Evenson *et al.* 1972.

Welton, T. A., 1948, "Some observable effects of the quantum-mechanical fluctuations of the electromagnetic field," *Phys. Rev. 74,* 1157–1167. [Box 17.2 part 6]

Wentzel, G., 1949, *Quantum Theory of Fields,* Interscience, New York. [§21.3, Boxes 7.1, 21.2]

Werner, F. G., 1969, private remark to J. A. Wheeler on June 3 at the Cincinnati, Ohio, Relativity Conference in the Midwest. [§44.5]

Westermann, A. and J. F. Boissonade, eds. 1878, "Marini vita Procli," xxxvii, *in Dioginis Laertii de Clarorum Philosophorum,* II, Paris, p. 169. [Fig. 1.8]

Weyl, H., 1922, *Space-Time-Matter,* translated by H. L. Brose, Methuen, London. [endpapers]

Weyl, H., 1924a, "Massenträgheit und Kosmos: Ein Dialog," *Naturwissenschaften 12,* 197–204. [§21.12]

Weyl, H., 1924b, *Was Ist Materie,* Springer, Berlin, Germany. [Box 15.1]

Weyl, H., 1925, "Theorie der Darstellung kontinuierlichen halb-einfacher Gruppen durch lineare Transformationen, I," *Math. Z. 23,* 271–309. [§2.2, Epigraph to Chap. 2]

Weyl, H., 1937, lectures at Princeton University. [§4.5]

Weyl, H., 1946, *Classical Groups: Their Invariants and Representation,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J., 2d ed. [Box 27.2]

Weyl, H., 1949, *Philosophy of Mathematics and Natural Science,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J., p. 116. [Epigraph to Chap. 6, Box 8.5]

Weyl, H., *cited by name in* §4.5, Boxes 16.4, 27.7, *quoted in* epigraph of Chap. 10. *See also* Lorentz *et al.* 1923.

Wheeler, J. A., 1955, "Geons," *Phys. Rev. 97,* 511–536. [§§21.12, 25.5, Box 15.1, Ex. 32.11]

Wheeler, J. A., 1959, "View that the distribution of mass and energy determines the metric," in *Onzième Conseil de Physique Solvay: La Structure et l'évolution de l'univers,* Éditions Stoops, Brussels, Belgium. [§§21.12, 43.1]

Wheeler, J. A., 1961, "Geometrodynamics and the problem of motion," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 33,* 63–78. [§20.6]

Wheeler, J. A., 1962, *Geometrodynamics,* Academic Press, New York. [§§43.4, 44.3, Fig. 44.1, Boxes 33.3, 36.2, 44.3]

Wheeler, J. A., 1964a, "Geometrodynamics and the issue of the final state," in DeWitt and DeWitt 1964b. [§§27.10, 21.11, 34.6, 35.13, 42.6, 43.1, Boxes 27.7, 44.4, Ex. 21.18]

Wheeler, J. A., 1964b, "Gravitation as geometry, II," in Chiu and Hoffman 1964. [§15.3]

Wheeler, J. A., 1964c, "Mach's principle as boundary condition for Einstein's equations," in Chiu and Hoffman 1964, pp. 303–349. [§§21.10, 21.12, 43.1]

Wheeler, J. A., 1966, "Superdense stars," in *Annual Review Astron. and Astrophys. Vol. 4,* L. Goldberg, ed., Palo Alto, Calif. pp. 393–432. [§24.3, Ex. 36.3]

Wheeler, J. A., 1968a, "Superspace and the nature of quantum geometrodynamics," in DeWitt and Wheeler 1968. [§§21.1, 21.8, Box 44.3]

Wheeler, J. A., 1968b, *Einstein's Vision,* Springer, Berlin. Contained in part in Wheeler 1968a. [§§21.8, 21.12, Ex. 21.23]

Wheeler, J. A., 1970, "Superspace," in Gilbert and Newton 1970, pp. 335–378. [§43.1]

Wheeler, J. A., 1971a, notebook entry, "Pregeometry and the calculus of propositions," 9:10 A.M., April 10; seminar, Department of Mathematics, Kings College, London, May 10; letter to L. Thomas, "Pregeometry and propositions," June 11, unpublished. [Box 44.5]

Wheeler, J. A., 1971b, "Transcending the law of conservation of leptons," in *Atti del Convegno Internazionale sul Tema: The Astrophysical Aspects of the Weak Interactions; Quaderno N. 157,* Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei, Roma, pp. 133–164. [§§41.11, 44.6, Box 25.2]

Wheeler, J. A., 1971c, "From Mendeléev's atom to the collapsing star," 189–233 in *Atti del Convegno Mendeléeviano,* Accademia delle Scienze, Torino; reprinted in *Trans. New York Acad. Sci., 33,* 745–779 (1971). *See also* Wyler 1971. [§28.3, Box 25.2]

Wheeler, J. A., 1971d, "Mechanisms for jets," in *Study week on nuclei of galaxies, Pontificiae Academiae Scientarum Scripta Varia no. 35,* 539–567. [Box 33.3]

Wheeler, John Archibald, *Festschrift* on the occasion of his sixtieth birthday, July 9, 1971. *See* Klauder 1972.

Wheeler, J. A., *cited by name in* §21.1, Box 8.5. *See also* Baierlein, Sharp, and Wheeler 1962, Brill and Wheeler 1957, DeWitt and Wheeler 1968, Douglas *et al.* 1969, Ford and Wheeler 1959a *and* 1959b, Fuller and Wheeler 1962, Harrison *et al.* 1965, Harrison and Wheeler 1958, Klauder *et al.* 1959, Lindquist and Wheeler 1957, Marzke and Wheeler 1964, Misner and Wheeler 1957 *and* 1972, Power and Wheeler 1957, Regge and Wheeler 1957, Ruffini and Wheeler 1970, 1971a, *and* 1971b, *and* Taylor and Wheeler 1966.

Wheeler, J. A., and R. P. Feynman, 1945, "Interaction with the absorber as the mechanism of radiation," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 17,* 157–181. [§4.7, Box 2.1]

Wheeler, J. A., and R. P. Feynman, 1949, "Classical electrodynamics in terms of direct inter-particle action," *Rev. Mod. Phys. 21,* 425–434. [§4.7, Box 2.1]

White, R. H. *See* Colgate and White 1966 *and* May and White 1966 *and* 1967.

Whitehead, A. N., 1922, *The Principle of Relativity,* Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, Eng. [§§38.2, 39.1, 39.3, 39.8, Box 17.3]

Whitehead, A. N., 1929, *The Function of Reason,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [Epigraph to Chap. 28]

Whitehead, J. H. C. *See* Veblen and Whitehead 1932.

Whitrow, G. J., and G. E. Morduch, 1965, "Relativistic theories of gravitation, a comparative analysis with particular reference to astronomical tests, in *Vistas in Astronomy 6,* 1–67. [§38.2]

Whittaker, E. R., 1904, "On an expression of the electromagnetic field due to electrons by means of two scalar potential functions," *Proc. R. Soc. London 1,* 367–372. [Ex. 4.10]

Wigner, E. P., 1960, "The unreasonable effectiveness of mathematics in the natural sciences," *Commun. Pure & Appl. Math. 13,* 1–14, reprinted in *Symmetries and Reflections: Scientific Essays of Eugene P. Wigner,* W. J. Moore and M. Scriven, eds., Indiana Univ. Press, Bloomington, Ind., 1967. [§44.2]

Wigner, E. P., *cited by name in* Box 38.2. *See also* Bargmann and Wigner 1948 *and* Salam and Wigner 1972.

Wilkins, D., 1972, "Bound geodesics in the Kerr metric," *Phys. Rev. D 5,* 814–822. [Box 33.5]

Wilkinson, D. T., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Bender *et al.* 1971 *and* Dicke *et al.* 1965.

Will, C. M., 1971a, "Relativistic gravity in the solar system, I: Effect of an anisotropic gravitational mass on the earth-moon distance," *Astrophys. J. 165,* 409–412. [Box 39.5]

Will, C. M., 1971b, "Relativistic gravity in the solar system, II: Anisotropy in the Newtonian gravitational constant," *Astrophys. J. 169,* 141–156. [§§38.2, 39.1, 40.8, Boxes 17.3, 39.5]

Will, C. M., 1971c, "Theoretical frameworks for testing relativistic gravity, II: Parametrized post-Newtonian hydrodynamics, and the Nordtvedt effect," *Astrophys. J. 163,* 611–628. [§§38.2, 39.3, 40.9, Box 39.5]

Will, C. M., 1971d, "Theoretical frameworks for testing relativistic gravity, III: Conservation laws, Lorentz invariance, and values of the PPN parameters," *Astrophys. J. 169,* 125–140. [§39.9, Box 39.5, Ex. 39.15]

Will, C. M., 1972. "The theoretical tools of experimental gravitation," Caltech Orange-Aid Preprint 289, to be published in Bertotti 1973. [§§38.2, 39.3, Box 39.5]

Will, C. M., 1973, "Relativistic gravity in the solar system, III: Experimental disproof of a class of linear theories of gravitation," *Astrophys. J.,* in press. [§§39.3, 39.8]

Will, C. M. *See also* Nordtvedt and Will 1972, Thorne, Ni, and Will 1971, *and* Thorne and Will 1971.

Will, C. M., and K. Nordtvedt, Jr., 1972, "Conservation laws and preferred frames in relativistic gravity, I: Preferred-frame theories and an extended PPN formalism," *Astrophys. J. 177,* 757–774. [§§38.2, 39.2, 39.3, 39.9, 40.8, Boxes 39.1, 39.5]

Willey, R. *See* Klauder *et al.* 1959.

Williams, R. W. *See* Bailey *et al.* 1968.

Willmore, T. J., 1959, *An Introduction to Differential Geometry,* Clarendon Press, Oxford, [Box 8.1]

Wilson, O. C. *See* Minkowski and Wilson 1956.

Wilson, R. W., *cited by name in* Box 27.7. *See also* Penzias and Wilson 1965.

Winsor, F., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Wintner, A., 1941, *Analytical Foundations of Celestial Mechanics,* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [Box 25.4]

Witteborn, F. C., and W. M. Fairbank, 1967, "Experimental comparison of the gravitational force on freely falling electrons and metallic electrons," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 19,* 1049–1052. [§1.3]

Witteborn, F. C., L. V. Knight, and W. M. Fairbank, 1965, "Use of low-temperature techniques to measure gravitational forces on charged particles," in *Proceedings of the 9th International Conference on Low-Temperature Physics, Columbus 1964,* Plenum Press, New York, 1965, part B, pp. 1248–1252. [§1.3]

Witten, L., ed., 1962, *Gravitation: An Introduction to Current Research,* Wiley, New York.

Witten, L. *See also* Carmeli, Fickler, and Witten 1970.

Wong, C.-Y., 1971, "Application of Regge calculus to the Schwarzschild and Reissner-Nordstrom geometries at the moment of time-symmetry," *J. Math. Phys. 12,* 70–78. [§§42.6, 42.7]

Woolf, N. *See* Douglas *et al.* 1969.

Wright, J. P., 1964, "General relativistic instability," *Phys. Rev. B 136,* 288–289. [Box 26.2]

Wright, T., 1750, *An Original Theory or New Hypothesis of the Universe,* H. Chapelle, London. Reprinted in Munitz 1957. [Box 27.7]

Wyler, J. A. (pseudonym), 1971, "Rasputin, science, and the transmogrification of destiny," preprint bearing the Princeton University seal.

York, J. W., Jr., 1971, "Gravitational degrees of freedom and the initial-value problem," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 26,* 1656–1658. [§§21.11, 21.12, Ex. 21.22]

York, J. W., Jr., 1972a, personal communication. [Ex. 21.8, 21.9, 21.24]

York, J. W., Jr., 1972b, "The role of conformal 3-geometry in the dynamics of gravitation," *Phys. Rev. Letters 28,* 1082–1085. [§§21.6, 21.11, Ex. 21.24]

York, J. W., Jr., 1973a, "Conformally invariant orthogonal decomposition of symmetric tensors on Riemannian manifolds and the initial-value problem of general relativity," *J. Math. Phys. 14,* in press. [§21.11]

York, J. W., Jr., 1973b, personal communication. [§§21.10, 21.11]

York, J. W., Jr., *cited by name in* §21.1, Ex. 21.8, 21.9. *See also* O'Murchadha and York 1973.

Yourgrau, W., and S. Mandelstam, 1968, *Variational Principles in Dynamics and Quantum Theory,* W. B. Saunders, Philadelphia, Pa. [Box 21.1]

Yu, J. T. *See* Peebles and Yu 1970.

Zapolsky, H. S., 1968, "Can the redshift of quasistellar objects be gravitational?" *Astrophys. J. Lett. 153,* 163–169. [Ex. 25.29]

Zaret, H., *quoted at end of* Chap. 44.

Zeeman, E. C., 1964, "Causality implies the Lorentz group," *J. Math. Phys. 5,* 190–493. [Box 2.1]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1963. "The theory of the expanding universe as originated by A. A. Friedmann," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk, 80,* 357–390. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—Uspekhi. 6,* 475–494 (1964). [§29.2]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1967, "Cosmological constant and elementary particles," *Zh. Eksp. & Teor. Fiz. Pis'ma 6,* 883–884. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 6,* 316–317. [§17.3, Ex. 17.5, Box 17.2 part 6]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1968, "The cosmological constant and the theory of elementary particles," *Usp. Fiz. Nauk 95,* 209–230. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—Uspekhi 11,* 381–393. [Ex. 17.5]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1970, "Particle production in cosmology," *Zh. Eksp. Teor. Fiz.—Pis'ma 12,* 443–447. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP Lett. 12,* 307–311. [§30.5, Ex. 27.12]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1971, "Particle creation by gravitational fields in collapse and singularities," *Comm. Astrophys. & Space Phys. 3,* 179–184. [Ex. 27.12]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., 1972, "Creation of particles and antiparticles in an electric and gravitational field," in Klauder 1972, pp. 277–288. [§30.8, Ex. 27.12]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B. *See also* Bisnovatyi-Kogan and Zel'dovich 1969, Braginsky, Zel'dovich, and Rudenko 1969, *and* Doroshkevich, Zel'dovich, and Novikov 1965.

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and O. H. Guseynov, 1965, "Collapsed stars in binaries," *Astrophys. J. 144,* 840–841. [Box 33.3]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and I. D. Novikov, 1966, "The hypothesis of cores retarded during expansion and the hot cosmological model," *Astron. Zh. 43,* 758–760. English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A. J. 10,* 602–603. [Box 33.3]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and I. D. Novikov, 1971, *Relativistic Astrophysics, Vol. I: Stars and Relativity,* Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago, Ill. [§§22.2, 23.1, 24.1, 24.3, 24.4, 24.6, 25.6, 32.1, Boxes 24.1, 24.2]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and I. D. Novikov, 1974, *Relativistic Astrophysics, Vol. II: The Universe and Relativity,* Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago, Ill., in press. [§§23.1, 28.1, 28.2, 30.1]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and M. A. Podurets, 1965, "The evolution of a system of gravitationally interacting point masses," *Astron. Zh. 42,* 963–973. English translation in *Sov. Astron.—A. J. 9,* 742–749 (1966). [§§24.6, 25.7, Boxes 24.1, 25.9]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and Yu. P. Rayzer, 1967, *Physics of Shock Waves and High-temperature Hydrodynamic Phenomena,* Academic Press, New York. [§22.2, Box 22.2]

Zel'dovich, Ya. B., and A. A. Starobinsky, 1971, "Particle production and vacuum polarization in an anisotropic gravitational field," *Zh. Eksp. Teor. Fiz. 61,* 2161–2175. English translation in *Sov. Phys.—JETP 34,* 1159–1166 (1972). [§30.5]

Zeno, *cited by name in* Box 30.1; *see* A. Grünbaum, 1967, *Modern Science and Zeno's Paradoxes,* Wesleyan Univ. Press, Middletown, Conn.

Zerilli, F. J., 1970a, "Effective potential for even-parity Regge-Wheeler gravitational perturbation equations," *Phys. Rev. Lett. 24,* 737–738. [Box 33.3]

Zerilli, F. J., 1970b, "Gravitational field of a particle falling in Schwarzschild geometry analyzed in tensor harmonics," *Phys. Rev. D 2,* 2141–2160. [§36.5, Fig. 36.2, Box 33.3]

Zimmer, H., 1946, *Myths and Symbols in Indian Art and Civilization,* Bollingen Foundation, Washington, D.C.; paperback reprint, Harper and Row, New York, 1962. [Box 27.7]

Zimmerman, B. A. *See* Fletcher *et al.* 1967.

Zwicky, F. *See* Baade and Zwicky 1934a *and* 1934b.

SUBJECT INDEX

A

Aberration
  formulas for, 68
  in light-deflection experiments, 1101
Absolute space of Newtonian theory, 19, 40, 291f
Absolute time of Newtonian theory, 291f
Abundances of elements, 765
Accelerated observer in curved spacetime, 327–332. *See also* Proper reference frame
Accelerated observer in flat spacetime, 163–175
  measuring equipment of, 164–165
  problems of principle in defining coordinate system of, 168–169
  constraints on size of frame, 168–169
  tetrad Fermi-Walker transported with, 169–172
  local coordinate system of, 172–176
  with rotating tetrad, 174f
Acceleration
  gravity mocked up by, 163ff
  equivalent to gravitational field. *See* Equivalence principle
  special relativity adequate to analyze, 163ff
  of neutron in nucleus, 163
  constant in comoving frame, for hyperbolic motion, 166–167
  4-acceleration always orthogonal to 4-velocity, 166
  See also Fermi-Walker transport
Acceleration, "absolute," and the equivalence principle, 17
Acceleration, relative. *See* Geodesic deviation
Accretion of gas onto a black hole, 885
Action. *See* Dynamical path length
Action principle. *See* Variational principle
Action at a distance, gravitational, 4
  Newton's stricture against, 41
  derived from local law, 120
Active vs. passive transformations, 1140
Adiabatic index defined, 692
Advanced fields, and radiation reaction, 474
Advanced potential, 121
After, undefined term in quantum geometrodynamics, 1183
Affine connection. *See* Connection, Covariant derivative
Affine geometry
  characterized, 191, 242
  in extenso, Chap. 10
  See also specific concepts, such as Covariant derivative, Connection coefficients
Affine parameter, defined, 211, 244ff
  of geodesic, 244–246
  effect of changing, on geodesic deviation, 269
  variational principle adapted to, 322–323
  in geometric optics, 575
Alternating symbol, in spinor analysis, defined, 1152. *See also* Levi-Civita tensor, Permutation tensor
Alternating tensor. *See* Permutation tensor
Ampère's law, from electromagnetic 4-potential, 122
Angle-effective distance vs. redshift, 795f
Angular integrals, useful formulas, 1001
Angular momentum in curved spacetime, for an isolated source
  defined by way metric approaches flatness
    in extenso, chapter 19
    in linearized theory, 448–451
    in general, 453ff
  as geometric object residing in asymptotically flat region, 453
  no meaning of, for closed universe, 457ff
  contribution of interbody matter and fields to, 468
  total unambiguous, despite contribution of pseudotensor to, 470
  Gaussian flux integral for, 460–464
  volume integral for, 460–466
  measured by satellite-orbit precession, 451, 454, 457
  measured by gyroscope precession, 451, 454, 457
  measured by frame dragging, 451, 457
  conservation laws for, 455, 468–471
  for Kerr-Newman black hole, 891
Angular momentum in flat spacetime
  density of, 151, 156f
  total, 156–159
  decomposition of total into intrinsic and orbital, 158f
  conservation of, 156f
  intrinsic, sets lower limit to size, 162
  parallel transport of, and Thomas precession, 175–176
Angular momentum in Newtonian theory, flux integral for, 470
Angular momentum operators, 240
Angular momentum, orbital, for test particles
  in Schwarzschild geometry, 656ff
  in Kerr-Newman geometry, 898f
Angular velocity
  extended to four dimensions, 170f
  rotating tetrad, vs. Fermi-Walker tetrad, 174f
  in context of spinor analysis, 1139, 1142
Angular velocity of orbital motion in Kerr-Newman geometry, 893ff
Anholonomic basis, 204, 210, 239
Anisotropy energy, 802, 807
Antisymmetrization, of tensor, 83

Asymptotically flat spacetime geometry, 453
form of, in linearized theory, 448ff
form of far from stationary fully relativistic source, 456f
key to defining mass and angular momentum, 457ff
in evaluation of Gaussian flux integral, 462f
"I weigh all that's here," 475
conformal treatment of infinity, 917–921
Automatic conservation of source, 404, 408f, 417. *See also* Bianchi identities

B

Background geometry
defined by limiting procedure, 479–480. *See also* Gravitational waves, shortwave formalism of
Backscatter of waves off curvature, 864f, 869ff, 957
Bar operation
in linearized theory, 436ff
in shortwave formalism, 967
Baryons
number density of, 558
mass density of, 1069, 1074
conservation law for. *See under* Conservation laws
Base metric, in time-symmetric initial-value problem, 535
Basis forms
3- and 4-forms for volume integrals, 150
2-forms and dual labeling thereof, 151
Basis 1-forms
dual to basis vectors, 60f, 202f, 232, 234
as coordinate gradients, 60ff
transformation laws for, 68, 203
connection coefficients for, 209, 215, 258f
Basis vectors, 50
in extenso, 201–207
as differential operators, 229f
dual to basis 1-forms, 60ff, 232
transformation laws for, 68, 201, 203, 230f
commutation coefficients for, 204
connection coefficients for, 209, 258f
coordinate vs. general basis, 201–203
coordinate basis, 230f
See also Proper reference frame, tetrad
Bell bongs, 55f, 60, 99, 202, 231
Bertotti-Robinson electromagnetic universe, 845
Betti numbers, characterize connectivity, 221
Bianchi identities
stated, 221f, 224, 325f
proved, 287
model for, in geodesic identity, 318
expressed in terms of curvature 2-form, 362
in terms of boundary of a boundary, Chap. 15
as automatically fulfilled conservation law, 405
required because geometrodynamic law must not predict coordinates, 409
applied to equations of motion, 473
from coordinate-neutrality of Hilbert-Palatini variational principle, 503
Big Dipper, shape unaffected by velocity of observer, 1160–1164
Binary star
black holes as members of, 886f
generation of gravitational waves by, 986, 988ff, 995
Binding energy of orbits around black holes, 885, 911
Birkhoff's theorem
for Schwarzschild geometry, 843f
for Reissner-Nordstrøm geometry, 844ff
Bivector
defined, 83
in surface of Whitaker's calumoid, 125
Black body. *See under* Radiation
Black hole, 884–887
in extenso, Chap. 33
brief summary of properties, 620
history of knowledge of, 620, 623
why deserve their name, 872–875
Kerr-Newman geometry as unique external field, 863, 875–877, *esp.* 876
"hair on," 43, 863, 876
baryon number transcended by, 876
lepton number transcended by, 640, 876
astrophysical aspects of, 883–887
mechanisms of formation, 883–884
gravitational waves from collapse that forms, 1041
dynamical processes, 884ff
can never bifurcate, 933
collision and coalescence of, 886, 924, 939
gravitational waves from hole-hole collisions, 886, 939, 982
interactions with matter, 885f
Cygnus X-1 as an examplar of, ix
gravitational waves from matter falling into, 885, 904, 982f, 986
change of parameters of hole due to infall of particles, 904–910, 913
extraction of energy from, 906, 908
experimental tests of general relativity using, 1047
See also Black-hole dynamics, laws of; Collapse, gravitational; Kerr-Newman geometry; Schwarzschild geometry
Black-hole dynamics, laws of, 887f. *See also* Second law of black-hole dynamics
Boost, 67ff
Boundary
of a boundary, route to Bianchi identities, Chap. 15
of a boundary is zero, 364–370
automatically conserve's Cartan's moment of rotation, 377–378
of the boundary of a 4-simplex, 380–381
Boundary operator, 96
Boyer-Lindquist coordinates, 877–880
Brackets, round and square, define symmetry, 126
Bragg reflection, related to 1-forms, 232
Brans-Dicke theory of gravity. *See* Gravitation, theories of: Dicke-Brans-Jordan theory
Brill-Hartle averaging process, 970
Brownian forces, 1038
Bubble-time derivative, 497
Buffer zone, in analysis of departures from geodesic motion, 476–480
Buoyant force, 606

C

Calumoid, Whitaker's, related to flux integrals, 125
Canonical structure, metric and symplectic structure, 126
Canonical variables, in Hamiltonian mechanics, 125
Cartan structure equations, 359
Carter's fourth constant, 899
Causal relationships in flat spacetime, 48, 51
Causal structure of curved spacetime, 922ff
future horizons, 923–924
global structure of horizons, theorems about, 924–925
global structure of horizons, analysis of, 926–931
See also Global techniques, Horizons
Causality, principle of, and the mechanism of radiation, 110
Caustics, of a horizon, 925
Cavendish experiment, 1121f
Cavendish gravitational constant, 1121ff
dependence on velocity relative to "preferred universal rest frame," 1123–1124
dependence on chemical composition of gravitating bodies, 1125
variations in, cause deviations from geodesic motion, 1127–1128
Center of mass, 161
Centrifugal forces, 294
Centrifuge, in idealized redshift experiment, 63f
Centroid, 161
Cepheid variable stars
pulsation of, 632
period-luminosity relation discovered, 758
as distance indicators, 786
confused with HII regions in Hubble's work, 709
confusion resolved by Baade, 710, 760
Chain rule
abstract, 314–315
for covariant derivative, 252, 257f, 260f
Chandrasekhar limit, 619

Charge
  evaluated from flux integral, 98
  of closed universe, meaningless integral for, 457–458
  as measured by tubes of force, in 2-form representation, 107
  as lines of force trapped in the topology of space, 221, 368, 1200f
Charge conservation. *See* Conservation laws, charge
Charge density-current
  4-vector, Lorentz transformation of, 68
  dual representations 88, 97f
  3-form, 113f, 151
  Dirac's representation, for particle in arbitrary motion, 120f
Chemical potential. *See under* Thermodynamics
Chinese historical records of Crab supernova, ii.
Classical mechanics, correspondence with quantum mechanics, 413
Classical theory, conceives of geometry and fields as measureable, 13
Clock "paradox," 167
Clocks
  bad vs. good, 26–27
  stability of, 28, 1048
  ideal
    defined, 393
    in Newton-Cartan theory, 301
    built on geodesics, 396–399
  specific types of, 28, 393–396
  influence of acceleration on, 164f, 327, 396
  influence of tidal forces on, 396
  as tools in parametrization of geodesics, 246
  infinite sequence of, needed as one approaches a singularity, 813f
Closed form, 114. *See also* Forms, differential
Closure of universe. *See* Cosmological models
Clusters of galaxies
  origin of, 766, 769f
  Virgo as source of gravitational waves, 1042
Cold, catalyzed matter, 624–626
Collapse, gravitational
  in one and two dimensions, 867f
  of a spherical shell of dust, 555–556
  of a spherical star
    analyzed by examining exterior geometry, 846–850, 857
    redshift of radiation from, 847, 849f, 872
    decay of luminosity of, 847, 850, 872
    surface of last influence, 873f
    Eddington-Finklestein diagram for, 849, 864, 873
    Kruskal diagram for, 848, 855
    embedding diagrams for, 855f
    comoving coordinates for, 857
    equations governing adiabatic collapse, 858f
    models with zero pressure, 859
    models with zero pressure and uniform density, 851–856, 859
  realistic, 862f, 883f
    triggering of, in late stages of stellar evolution, 627, 862
    collapse, pursuit, and plunge scenario, 629
    evolution of small perturbations from spherical symmetry, 864–866
    Price's theorem, 866
    gravitational waves emitted during, 1041
    inevitability of, for massive stars, 819
    in a dense star cluster, 884
    creation of Kerr-Newman black hole by, 882–883
    at three levels: universe, black hole, quantum fluctuations, 1201
    issue of the final state, 940, 1196f
    black box model of, 1209, 1213–1217
    importance of and philosophical implications of, 437, 1196f
Collapsed star. *See* Neutron star, Black hole
Collisions of particles in flat spacetime, 19, 69f
Comma-goes-to-semicolon rule, 387–392. *See also* Equivalence principle
Commutation, of observables on spacelike hypersurface, 554
Commutation coefficients of basis vectors, 204, 243, 314
  calculated by exterior derivative of basis 1-forms, 358f
  for rotation group, 243
Commutator
  of tangent vectors, 204, 206f, 235–240
  Jacobi identity for, 240
  as closer of quadrilaterals, 236, 278
  pictorial representation of, 236–237
  for rotation group, 332
  for normal and tangent to spacelike slice, 517
  of covariant derivatives, 276, 389ff
Compatibility of metric and covariant derivative, 313ff, 353f
Complexion, of electromagnetic field, 108, 482
Component manipulations. *See* Index manipulations
Component notation, to remove ambiguity of slots, 84
Components
  of vectors, introduced, 8–10, 50–51
  of 1-forms, introduced, 61
  of tensors, introduced, 75
  of curvature tensor, introduced, 34, 37, 40, 42
  See also Index manipulations
Concepts of physics, defined by theory itself, 71f
Conduction of heat, 567
Conformal curvature tensor. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
Conformal part of 3-geometry, in York's formulation of initial-value problem, 540–541
Conformal transformation of infinity. *See under* Infinity
Connection, measured by light signals and free particles, 324
  See also Covariant derivative
Connection coefficients
  summarized, 223
  as components of covariant derivative, 208f, 256, 261–262
  calculated from metric and commutators, 210, 216, 314
  symmetries of, 213–214
  transformation law for, 262
  specialized to a coordinate basis
    called "Christoffel symbols," 210
    contraction of, in terms of metric, 222
    formula for, from Palatini variational principle, 502
  unique, to make geodesics agree with straight lines of local Lorentz geometry, 314f
  illustrated by great-circle navigation, 212
  specific cases of
    for plane, in polar coordinates, 213, 263
    for flat 3-geometry, polar coordinates, 213
    for 2-sphere, 341, 345
    for rotation group, 264
    for Riemann normal coordinates, 286f
    for Newton-Cartan spacetime, 291f, 294, 298
    for proper reference frame of accelerated observer, 330f
Connectivity
  at small distances, 221
  of spacetime, in classical differential geometry, 1204–1205
  charge as trapped lines of force, 221, 368, 1200f
  See also Topology
Conservation laws
  equivalence of differential and integral formulations of, 146
  baryon number, 558f, 563ff
    applied to pulsating stars, 691f
    applied to collapsing stars, 858
    in PPN formalism, 1088
  electric charge, 369f
    differential formulation of, 88, 568, 570
    integral formulation from differential via Stokes theorem, 98, 156
    as consequence of $dd = 0$, 118
  energy-momentum($\boldsymbol{\nabla} \cdot \boldsymbol{T} = 0$)
    tested in elementary particle physics, 19
    in flat spacetime, 132, 146, 152–155
    integral formulation in flat spacetime, 142–146

Conservation laws (*continued*)
transition to curved spacetime, 386f, 390
to be interpreted as automatic, via "wiring up" to geometry, 364, 367f, 371, 404–407
in terms of generalized exterior derivative, 362f
various mathematical representations for, 379
total mass-energy and 4-momentum of a gravitating source, 455, 468–471
for test-particle motion
related to Killing vector field, 651
related to Hamilton's principle, 654
in Schwarzschild geometry, 655–658
in any spherical, static geometry, 681
in Kerr metric and electromagnetic field, 898f
Constants, fundamental
listed, endpapers
limits on deviations from constancy, 1061–1063
Constraint, as signaling reduced number of degrees of freedom, 528f
Constraints, first and second class, in Dirac's formulation of geometrodynamics, 486
Constructive interference
as shortest leap from quantum to classical, 1185
in particle mechanics and in geometrodynamics, compared, 1186f
behind Hamilton-Jacobi formulation of mechanics and geometrodynamics, 423f
Continuity, equation of, 152ff, 565
"Continuous creation," 745, 750, 770
Contraction of tensor, 82
Contravariant components, 76, 201–207, 312
Controlled ignorance, philosophy of, 452f, 996
Convection, in supermassive stars, 600
Coordinate patch, concept introduced, 10–12
Coordinate systems
nature of, deducible from metric, 595f
of accelerated observers, 172–176
asymptotically Minkowskiian, 463
Boyer-Lindquist, 877–880
comoving, for collapsing star, 857
comoving, for universe, 715ff
curvilinear, in linearized theory, 441
Eddington-Finklestein, 828–831, 849
Euclidean, 22f
Fermi normal, 332
Galilean, 289, 291–298, 414
Gaussian normal, 516, 518, 715ff
isotropic, for Schwarzschild geometry, 840
isotropic, for static, spherical system, 595
Kerr, 879f
Kerr-Schild, 903
Kruskal-Szekeres, 827, 831–836
local Lorentz, 207
Lorentz, 22f
Minkowski, *same as* Lorentz
Novikov, 826f
of post-Newtonian formalism, 1073f, 1082–1087, 1089, 1091, 1097
Regge-Wheeler, *same as* Tortoise
Riemann normal, 285ff, 329–332
Schwarzschild, for Schwarzschild geometry, 607
Schwarzschild, for static, spherical systems, 597
Schwarzschild, for pulsating star, 689
for any spherical system, 616f
Tortoise, for Schwarzschild geometry, 663, 665–666
Coordinates, 5–10
canonical, in context of differential forms and symplectic structure, 125f
must not be predicted by geometrodynamic law, 409
rotation and translation of, in Newton-Cartan theory, 294f
preferred, in Newton, Minkowskii, and Einstein spacetime, 296
Coordinate singularities. *See* Singularities, coordinate
Coplanarity, test for, 281
Coriolis forces, 165, 175, 294, 327, 332
Correspondence, between 1-forms and vectors, 310. *See also* Vectors; Forms, differential
Correspondence principles, 412f
Cosmic censorship, 937
Cosmic gravitational-wave background, 712, 736f, 764f
Cosmic microwave radiation, 712f, 764ff
prediction of by Gamow *et al.,* 760
isotropy of, 703
existence of, refutes steady-state cosmological model, 770
incompatible with "turnaround universe," 751
Cosmic neutrino background, 712, 736f, 764f
Cosmic rays, 757
evolution of mean density of, 798
observations refute Klein-Alfven cosmological models, 770
Cosmological constant, 410ff
Einstein's invention and retraction of, 410f, 707, 758
influence on evolution of universe, 747, 771, 774
Cosmological models
anisotropic, Chap. 30
Brans-Dicke, 770
closure of universe
related to Mach's principle, 543, 549
as boundary condition, 1181
de Sitter, 745, 758
Einstein static universe, 746f, 750, 758f
flat, closed, static 3-torus model, 284
Friedmann
discovery of, by Friedmann and Lemaitre, 751, 758
assumption of homogeneity and isotropy, 703, 713
assumption of perfect-fluid stress-energy tensor, 711f
assumed equation of state, 713, 726
implications of homogeneity and isotropy, 714f, 720ff
isotropy implies homogeneity, 715, 723
coordinate system constructed, 715ff
expansion factor introduced, 718
arbitrariness in expansion factor, 720ff
expansion factor renormalized, 721f
possible 3-geometries for homogeneous hypersurfaces, 720–725
curvature parameter $K = k/a^2$, 721
line element, various forms for, 721ff, 731, 759
embedding diagrams, 723, 725
topology not unique, 725
first law of thermodynamics for, 726ff
assumption that matter and radiation exchange negligible energy, 726ff, 765
assumption that pressure of matter can always be neglected, 726, 728
density and pressure expressed in terms of expansion factor, 727
Einstein tensor for, 728
orthonormal frames attached to matter, 728
initial-value equation (for $a_{,t}{}^2$), 744
dynamic equation (for $a_{,tt}$), 729
dynamic equation derivable from initial-value equation plus first law of thermodynamics, 729
time parameters: t, a, η, 730–732
observer's parameters vs. relativity parameters, 771ff
implications of parameter values for future of universe, 747, 771, 773f
dynamics of early stage independent of k (unaffected by closure), 742f
critical density for closure of universe if $\Lambda = 0$, 782
small perturbations of, 800f
See also Hubble constant, Density parameter, Deceleration parameter
Friedmann, closed ($k = +1$, $\Lambda = 0$)
in extenso, 733–742
track-1 overview, 704–711
Einstein's arguments favoring closure, 704
critical density for closure, 710, 782
geometry of 3-sphere hypersurfaces, 704, 721, 723f
radius of, defined, 704
radius of maximum expansion, 705
embedding diagram, 723f
volume of, 724
topology not unique, 725
first law of thermodynamics applied to, 705, 726ff

initial-value equation for, 537, 705f, 729, 733
effective potential for evolution of, 706
inevitability of recollapse, 707
solutions of field equations for, 734f
radiation-dominated era, 733–737, 740ff
matter-dominated era, 733ff, 738–742
coordinate diagram for, 741
concrete numbers for a typical model, 738
propagation of signals around universe, 741, 750
causal isolation of various regions from each other, 740ff
mocked up by Schwarzschild-lattice universe, 739f
compared with Newtonian cosmological models, 707f
Friedmann, flat and open ($k = 0$, $k = -1$; $\Lambda = 0$)
geometry of homogeneous hypersurfaces, 721, 724f
embedding diagram, 724f
topology not unique, 725
Solutions of field equations for, 742
radiation-dominated era, 742f
matter-dominated era, 743f
Friedmann, plus cosmological constant ($k = 0, \pm 1$; $\Lambda \neq 0$)
initial-value equation (for $a_{,t}^2$), 744
effective potential for evolution of, 744, 746, 748f
dynamical evolution of, 744–747
special cases of, 745ff, 750f
hesitation universe, 750
hierarchic (island) universe, 748f, 770
inhomogeneous, Chap. 30
inhomogeneous Gowdy models, 804
inhomogeneous but spherical models, 804
Kasner model, 801, 805ff
Klein-Alfven model, 748, 770
mixmaster, 805–814
Newtonian, 707f, 759
primordial chaos in big-bang models, 769, 802ff
in extenso, Chap. 30
primordial black holes produced by, 884
See also Isotropy and homogeneity of universe, possible explanations of
Schwarzschild lattice universe, 739f
steady-state universe, 745, 750, 770
turnaround universe, 750f
See also Cosmology: history of universe according to "standard big-bang model"
Cosmology:
expansion of universe
prediction of by Friedmann, de Sitter, and Weyl, 758, 776
discovery of by Hubble, 759, 792–794
removed motive for cosmological term, 410–411
was greatest prediction of Einstein's theory, 411
what expands and what does not, 719, 739
"Where is the new space added?" 719, 739
will Universe recontract? 747, 771, 774
See also Hubble expansion rate
history of man's ideas and knowledge of the universe, 752–762
history of the universe according to the "standard big-bang model"
in extenso, Chap. 28
initial singularity, 769f
what "preceded" initial singularity? 769
possible roles of primordial chaos, 769, 803f, 816. *See also* Cosmological models: primordial chaos
complete thermal equilibrium at $t \ll 1$ second, 736, 763f
decoupling of gravitational waves and neutrinos, 736, 764
recombination of pairs, 736f, 764
thermal interaction of matter and radiation during expansion, 765f
transition from matter dominance to radiation dominance, 741f, 765f
condensation of stars, galaxies, and clusters of galaxies, 766, 769, 800
past history not much affected by k (by geometry of hypersurfaces), 742f, 763
expansion forever vs. recontraction, 747, 771, 774
observational probes of standard model, 780–798
summary of, 797f
distance-redshift relation, derivation of, 780f
distance-redshift relation, observational data, 781, 785–788, 792ff. *See also* Hubble expansion rate
magnitude-redshift relation, derivations of, 782–785, 794
magnitude-redshift relation, observational data, 788–791
angle-effective distance vs. redshift ("lens effect of universe"), 795f
source counts (number-flux relation), 798
mean mass density of universe, 710ff, 796f
comparison of temperature, redshift, and emission times for cosmic background radiations, 737
abundances of elements, 765
comparison of ages deduced by various methods, 797f
evolution of quasar population, 767f, 770
experimental tests of general relativity using cosmological observations, 1047
observed properties of universe
homogeneity on large scales, 703, 815
isotropy on large scale, 703, 801, 815
rotation, observational limits on, 939
cosmological expansion, 772, 775f, 785–788, 793f
age deduced from expansion rate, 709f, 797
ages of oldest stars, 709, 797f
ages of rocks and meteorites, 759, 761, 798
deceleration parameter, 785, 788–791
density parameter, 796f
mean density of luminous matter, 710f, 761
mean density of cosmic rays, 712, 757, 798
mean density of intergalactic matter, 712, 761f, 797
mean density in electromagnetic radiation, 712
energy and pressure in kinetic motions of galaxies and stars, 711
abundances of elements, 765
entropy per baryon, 766
quasar population, evolution of, 767f, 770
"fine-scale" structure, 703
See also Cosmic microwave radiation, Hubble expansion rate
speculations about initial and final states of universe, 707, 1209, 1213–1217
Coulomb field, "pancaking" of, for fast charged particle, 124
Coulomb force, from electromagnetic 4-potential, 122
Coupling of fields to matter, direct vs. indirect, 1063f
Covariance, general. *See* General covariance
Covariant components of a tensor, 76, 201–207, 312
Covariant derivative
fundamental equations summarized, 223–224
defined by parallel transport, 208, 249
pictorialized, 209, 212
algebra of, 250–261
chain rule for, 214, 250, 252, 257f, 260f
symmetry of ("no torsion"), 250, 252, 353f
additivity of, 252
commutes with contraction, 214
compatibility with metric, 215f, 313ff, 353f
noncommutation of two covariant derivatives, 389ff
as a machine with slots, 253ff
is not a tensor, 253, 255f
connection coefficients as its components, 210, 256, 261f
rotation 1-forms constructed from, 349ff, 359f
semicolon notation for, introduced, 210

Covariant derivative (*continued*)
component calculations of, 215
of tensor densities, 501f
in a hypersurface, 510
regarded as a gravitational field, 387
See also Connection coefficients; Parallel transport; Rotation coefficients
Crab nebula, ii, 619f, 760
Cross section
collisional, 69
Lorentz transformation of, 70
Crystallography, related to 1-forms, 232
Current 4-vector. *See* Charge density-current
Curvature, constant, 3-geometries of, 720–725
Curvature, formalism of
fundamental equations, summarized, 223–224
Bel-Robinson (tidal) tensor, 381f
conformal (Weyl) tensor
introduced, 325, 327
principal null congruences of, 902
Petrov-Pirani algebraic classification of, 1165
spinor representation of, 1154f
in Nordstrøm-Einstein-Fokker theory of gravity, 429, 431
vanishes in 3 dimensions, 550
Einstein tensor
introduced, 222, 325f
track-1 equations summarized, 224
as trace of double dual of ***Riemann***, 325f, 376
formula for mixed components in terms of Riemann components, 343f
in terms of intrinsic and extrinsic curvature, 515
interpreted as moment of rotation, 373–377
contracted Bianchi identity ("conservation of ***Einstein***"), 325, 377ff
conservation of, from boundary of a boundary, 377ff
uniqueness of, 405, 407f
curvature 2-form, 348–363
picture of, for 2-sphere, 337
picture of, for pith helmet, 338
curvature operator $\mathfrak{R}$
introduced, 271
regarded as bivector-valued 2-form, 376–380
as twice-applied exterior derivative, 351
as machine-with-slots, 351f
in context of Newton-Cartan theory, 299
extrinsic curvature of a hypersurface, 511–516
contrasted with intrinsic curvature, 336, 421
operator for, 511
tensor for, 512
from Lie derivative of metric, 520
Gauss-Codazzi relations, 514ff
Gaussian curvature of a 2-surface, 30, 44, 336f
intrinsic curvature of a hypersurface, 509f
invariants of ***Riemann***, 491
Jacobi curvature tensor, 286f
Jacobi curvature operator, 286
in context of Newton-Cartan theory, 299, 301
principal radii of curvature for a 2-surface, 44, 335f
Riemann tensor
component formulas for, summarized, 224, 266
component formula for in non-coordinate basis, 277
Riemann, matrix display of components of, 360f
elementary introduction to, 31, 34–37, 39
in extenso track-1 treatment (metric present), 218–224
in extenso, in absence of metric, 270–288
in extenso, properties induced by introduction of metric, 324–327
defined by parallel transport around closed curve, 277–282
proof of tensor character, 276
defined by geodesic deviation, 29–37, 218f, 270–277, 287
relation to curvature operator, 274ff
relation to noncommuting covariant derivatives, 389ff
relation to curvature 2-form, 352
as machine with slots, 271, 274f
symmetries of, 35, 220ff, 286, 324f
number of independent components, 326
invariants of, 491
in 2 and 3 dimensions: deducible from Ricci tensor, 334, 343, 550
Bianchi identities, 221f, 224, 325f. *See also* Bianchi identities
only tensor from, and linear in, second derivatives of metric, 408
wave equation for, 382
dynamic components of, 517f
spinor representation of, 1154f
in Newton-Cartan spacetime, 290, 302
in linearized theory, 438
Riemann tensor, double dual of, 325f, 343, 371, 376
Ricci tensor, 222, 325f
in Newton-Cartan theory, 290, 300
scalar curvature
introduced, 222, 325
in terms of area deficit, 516
for a 3-surface, 422f
Gauss-Bonnet integral of, 309, 381
in Hilbert action principle, 418, 491
Weyl tensor. *See* Conformal tensor
York's curvature, 541, 550
Curvature, methods of calculating
in extenso, Chap. 14
analytical, on a computer, 342
straightforward method, from connection and its derivative, 340f
mixed components of ***Einstein*** expressed explicitly in terms of ***Riemann*** components, 343f
geodesic Lagrangian method, 344–348
via 2-forms, theory, 348–354
via 2-forms, method, 354–362
ways to display results, 334, 360f
"Curvature coupling" in equivalence principle, 389–392
Curvature of spacetime
modeled by surface of apple, 4f
implied by gravitational red shift, 187ff
generation of, by mass-energy, 37–44, Chap. 17
measured by geodesic deviation, 29–37, 195f, 270–275
procedure-in-principle to measure, 72
measured by gravity gradiometer, 400–403
coupling to physics in equivalence principle, 389–392
coupling to moments of a macroscopic object, 391f, 476–480, 1120f
can be great locally even if average is near zero, 220
See also Geodesic deviation, Tidal forces, Spacetime geometry
"Curvature parameter" of Friedmann cosmologies, 721
Curvature tensors for specific manifolds
gravitational wave, exact, plane, 346f, 444
gravitational wave, linearized, 948
linearized theory, any metric, 438
Friedmann cosmology, 345, 348, 355ff, 537, 728
Newton-Cartan spacetime, 290
Newtonian sphere of uniform density, 39f
Newtonian spherical vacuum field, 37
Schwarzschild metric, 821ff
spherical, dynamic line element, 361f
spherical, static line element in Schwarzschild coordinates, 360f
3-hyperboloid, 343, 721
3-sphere, 343, 721
3-surface of "constant curvature," 721
2-hyperboloid, 334
2-sphere, 30, 341
2-surface of revolution, 339f
world tube of a collapsing star's surface, 853
Curvature. *See also* Bianchi identities; Gauss-Weingarten equations; Gauss-Codazzi equations
Curve, in context of differential topology, 226
Curves, congruence of, 240
Cutoff, related to Planck length, 428
Cycloidal motion

for radial geodesics in Schwarzschild geometry, 664
for test particle in field of a Newtonian point mass, 708
for radius of closed Friedmann cosmology, 708
for surface of a pressure-free collapsing star, 852

D

"*d*," three usages of this differential symbol, 95–96
d'Alembertian operator. *See* Wave operators
Day, length of, 23–26, 1124f
de Rham operator. *See* Wave operators
de Broglie wave, 53, 55–59
de Sitter universe, 745, 758
Deceleration parameter of universe
  defined, 772
  relationship to other cosmological parameters, 771–773
  determinant of whether universe will recontract, 774
  magnitude-redshift relation for measuring, 782–785, 794
  observational data on, 785, 788–791
Deficit angles, 309, 1167ff
Deflection of light, gravitational,
  pictorial explanation of, 32
  early Einstein words on, 431
  calculated in linearized theory, 184f, 446
  calculated in Schwarzschild coordinates, 679
  calculated in PPN formalism, 1101ff
  post-post-Newtonian corrections to, 1069
  magnitude of, compared with current technology, 1048, 1101
  experimental results on, 1104f
  in flat-space theories of gravity, 179, 184f
Deflection of particles by a central field, 671, 1099f
Degenerate electron gas. *See* White-dwarf matter
Degenerate neutron gas. *See* Neutron-star matter
Degrees of freedom, counting of, for geometrodynamics and electrodynamics, 529–533
Delta, Kronecker, 22
Delta function, Dirac, 121
Democracy of histories, 418–419
Density of universe. *See under* Cosmology: observed properties of the universe
"Density parameter" of universe, 772, 796f
Derivative, covariant. *See* Covariant derivative
Derivative, directional. *See* Directional derivative
Derivative, following fluid, 153, 1078
Detailed balance, principle of, 1028ff, 1033, 1035f
Determinant
  derivative of, 160–161
  and Jacobian, 160–161
Deviation, geodesic. *See* Geodesic deviation
DeWitt equation, 1189. *See also* Einstein-Schrödinger equation
Dicke-Brans-Jordan theory of gravity. *See under* Gravitation, theories of
Dicke-Eötvös experiment. *See* Eötvös-Dicke experiment
Dicke's framework for analyzing experiments, 1049, 1064
Differentiable manifold. *See* Manifold, differentiable
Differentiable structure, 242
Differential conservation law, equivalence to integral conservation law, 146
Differential forms. *See* Forms, differential
Differential geometry
  overview of, 194–198
  track-1 treatment of, Chap. 8
  track-2 treatment of, Chaps. 9–11, 13–15
  texts on, 196
  three levels of: pictorial, abstract, components, 198–200
  Cartan's contributions to, 198
  applications of, listed, 198
  See also Differential topology, Affine geometry, Riemannian geometry, *and specific concepts, such as* Metric, Connection, Forms
"Differential," of differential calculus, rigorous version of, 62
  interpreted as a 1-form, 63
  interpreted as *p*-form, 160–161
Differential topology, 197f, Chap. 9, *esp.* 240–243. *See also specific concepts, e.g.,* Manifold, Lie derivative
Dimensionality, 10, 12
Dirac brackets, 486, 520
Dirac delta function, 121
Dirac equation, in Schwarzschild geometry, 1165
Directional derivative
  of a function along a vector, 59–60
  operator for, 61
  as a tangent vector, 227–230
Disks, rapidly rotating, in general relativity, 621
Dispersion relations obtained from Hamiltonians, 486f, 494, 498
Distance, proper. *See* Interval, Lorentz
Distance-redshift relation. *See under* Cosmology: observational probes of standard model
Distances, as raw material of metric, 306–309
Distant action. *See* Action at a distance
Distant stars, inertial influence of. *See* Mach's principle
Distribution. *See* Dirac delta function
Distribution function, 583f, 590
Divergence of a vector or tensor, 82, 213, 222, 261
Divergences, in theory of particles and fields, 426–428
Double star. *See* Binary star
Dragging of inertial frames
  in PPN formalism, 1117–1120
  by Earth's rotation, 1119f
  by a slowly rotating star, 699
  in Kerr-Newman geometry, 879ff, 893–896
  prospects to measure, 1120
  See also Mach's principle
Dual bases, 60f, 119, 202, 232
Duality operation on forms, vectors, and tensors
  on forms, 88, 97f, 108, 119, 151
  on simple forms, expressed in terms of perpendicularity, 98
  application to electromagnetism, 88, 97f, 114
  double dual of Riemann, 371, 376
  not to be confused with duality of bases, 119
  special star operation that does not act on forms, 376–380
Duality rotation of electromagnetic field, 108, 482f
Dynamical path length
  in elementary mechanics, 486–487
  as proportional to phase of wave function, 486
  in superspace formulation of geometrodynamics, 419, 1186
  See also Variational principle

E

Earth
  atmosphere and gravity, 388
  crust, as detector of gravitational waves, 1013, 1015
  general precession (precession of rotation axis), 391, 392, 1112, 1113
  gravitational multipole moments, 401
  mass, radius, density. *See* endpapers
  motion relative to cosmic microwave radiation, 713
  particles oscillating in hole bored through, 39
  rotation of, drags inertial frames, 1119f. *See also* Day
  satellite orbits used to deduce mass, 638
  shape as described by collection of distances, 306–309
  subsurface mass variations, 401
  tides, as experimental test of general relativity, 1123f
  vibrations of, as detector for gravitational waves, 1013, 1015, 1035f
Eccentricity of an elliptical orbit, 647
Eclipses, 24–26, 1104
Eddington-Finklestein coordinates, 828–831, 849
Eddington-Finklestein diagrams, 829, 830, 849, 864, 873
Effective potentials
  for test particles in Schwarzschild geometry, 639, 656, 659–662

Effective potentials (*continued*)
for charged test particles in equatorial plane of Kerr-Newman hole, 911
for waves in Schwarzschild geometry, 868, 870
for scalar waves in Kerr geometry, 915
for radius of Friedmann universe, 706, 744, 746, 748f
for oscillations of mixmaster universe, 809ff
Einstein. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
EIH equations of motion, 1091, 1094–1095
Eikonal method, 1102
Einstein A coefficients, 1029
Einstein's elevator, 298. *See also* Equivalence principle
Einstein field equation, 431–434
elementary introduction to, 41ff
integral equation equivalent to, 995–996
variational principles for. *See under* Variational principles
derivations of
in extenso. Chap. 17, esp. 406, 416–482
from automatic conservation of source, 379f, 417
from Hilbert's action principle, 418
from physics on a spacelike slice, 419–423
from spin-2 field theory, 424f, 437
from superspace analysis, 423f
from "metric elasticity of space," 426ff
modified by cosmological term, 410–412
correspondence with Newtonian theory, 412–416
and collapse, 1198–1199
See also Geometrodynamics
Einstein-Infeld-Hoffman equations of motion, 1091, 1094–1095
Einstein-Rosen bridge, 837ff
Einstein-Schrödinger equation, 1189f
Einstein static universe, 746, 747, 750, 758f
Einstein summation convention, 9
Einstein tensor. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
Einstein's theory of gravity. *See* General relativity
Elasticity, 426–428
Electrodynamics
in flat spacetime, *in extenso,* Chap. 3
in curved spacetime, *in extenso,* 385–391, 568–570
in language of forms, *in extenso,* Chap. 4
in language of spinors, 1154, 1165
in terms of boundary of a boundary, 365–370
in geometric optics limit. *See* Geometric optics
canonical formulation of, as a guide to geometrodynamics, 496f, 522ff
analog of Palatini variational method in, 495–498
three-plus-one view versus geometric view, 78–79
deduced from vector potential, 122
deduced from electrostatics plus covariance, 81
lines of force never end, as core principle of, 420
analogies and comparisons with geometrodynamics, 35, 348, 364, 367–370
See also Initial-value problem, Integrating forward in time
Electromagnetic field
descriptions of and equations governing electric and magnetic fields, 73f
Lorentz transformation of, 78f
dual of electromagnetic field tensor, ***Maxwell***
introduced, 88, 105
egg-crate picture of, 107, 109
divergence vanishes, 88
exterior derivative gives charge density and current, 113f
vector potential, 88f, 120, 569
wave equation for, 89, 120, 388–391, 569
electromagnetic field tensor (or 2-form), ***Faraday***
as machinery to produce force from 4-velocity, 73, 101, 104
components of, 73–74
expressed in terms of exterior products, 99
egg-crate pictures of, 99f, 104, 106, 107, 111
"canonical representation" of, 122
special cases of pure electric, pure magnetic, and null, 122
generic case reduced to simplest form, 122, 483
Maxwell's equations for, in component notation, 80f, 568
divergence gives charge density and current, 81, 88
exterior derivative vanishes, 112f, 117
invariants, 110, 480–483
field momentum, 496f, 522ff
stress-energy tensor, 140f
divergence vanishes, 89
complexion, 108, 482
calumoid, 125
Lorentz force, 71ff, 101, 104, 568
Maxwell's equations, 80f, 568. *See also* Maxwell's equations
Lorentz transformations, 78f, 108ff, 482f
Electromagnetic field produced by specific sources
oscillating dipole, 111–112
point charge, 107–111, 121f
Electron
quasibound in field of small black hole, 1164
spinning, Thomas precession of, 175–176
Electron capture, in white-dwarf matter, 619
Elementary-particle experiments as tests of relativity theory, 1054f, 1060. *See also* *under* Conservation laws, energy-momentum
Elements, abundances of, 765
Elevator, 431. *See also* Uniqueness of free fall, Tide-producing acceleration
Embedding diagrams
general discussion, 613
for a static, spherical star, 613–615, 617
for Schwarzschild geometry, 837, 839, 528
for a spherical, collapsing star, 855–856
for Friedmann cosmological models, 723, 725
Energy-at-infinity
in Schwarzschild geometry, 656ff
in Kerr-Newman geometry, 898f, 910
Energy in mechanics, as time rate of change of action, 486–487
Energy of a particle, expressed as $-\boldsymbol{p}\cdot\boldsymbol{u}$, 65
Energy-momentum
4-vector, 51, 53f, 68
density of
revealed by stress-energy tensor, 131
3-form for, 151
of gravitational field
nonlocalizable in generic case, 466ff
precisely localizable only for spherical systems, 603–604, 858f
localizable only to within a wavelength for gravitational waves, 955f, 964–966, 969f
total, of a gravitating source
in terms of asymptotic gravitational field, Chap. 19
expressed as a flux integral, 461–464
expressed as a volume integral, 464–466
conservation of. *See under* Conservation laws
Entropy. *See under* Second law of thermodynamics
Eötvös-Dicke experiments, 14–17, 1050–1055
early Einstein words on, 431
implications for constancy of fundamental constants, 1061–1063
for massive (self-gravitating) bodies, 1127–1131
Ephemeris for solar system (J.P.L.), 1095, 1097
Ephemeris second, 28
Equation of structure, Cartan's, 378
Equations of motion
derived from Einstein field equation, 42–43, 471–480
for bodies separated by distances large compared to their sizes
"EIH" (post-Newtonian) for spherical bodies, 1091, 1094–1095
deviations from geodesic motion, 1120–1121, 1128
Equations of state
for nuclear and white-dwarf matter, 624–626
for "cosmological fluid," 713, 726

Equinoxes, precession of, 391f, 1112f
Equivalence principle
  enunciated, 386f, 1060
  Einstein's 1911 formulation of, 17
  bridge from special relativity to general relativity, 164, Chap. 16, 207
  out of spin-2 field theory, 425
  in Newton-Cartan theory, 297
  basis for affine parameter, 211, 250
  factor-ordering problems in, 388–391
  role in metric theories, 1067f
  tests of, 187–190, 1054–1063
  weak equivalence principle. *See* Uniqueness of free fall
Ergosphere, 880
Ether, 1051, 1064f
Euclidean geometry, 19–22
  contrasted with Lorentz geometry, 51
Euler angles, 243
Euler relation, on vertices, edges, faces, 1175
Euler equation of hydrodynamics
  in flat spacetime, 152f
  in curved spacetime, 564
  in PPN formalism, 1088
  applied to a pulsating star, 693–694
  applied to a collapsing star, 858
Eulerian perturbations, 690–691
Events, 6, 9f
  identifiability as key, 225
  as classical, not valid quantum concept, 1184
Expansion of universe. *See under* Cosmology
"Expansion," of a bundle of null rays, 582, 1165
"Expansion," of a congruence of world lines, 565f
Experimental tests of general relativity
  in extenso, Chaps. 38, 39, 40
  Beall test of uniqueness of free fall, 17
  black holes, 1047
  catalogued, 1129
  constancy of fundamental constants, 1061–1063
  cosmological observations used for, 707, 1047, 1061, 1067
  deflection of electromagnetic waves by sun, 1048, 1069, *esp.* 1101–1105
  "de Sitter effects" in Earth-moon orbit, 1116, 1119
  Earth's failure to collapse, 398f
  Earth's rotation rate, periodicities in, 1124–1125
  Earth tides due to galaxy and to motion relative to preferred frame, 1123–1124
  Eötvös-Dicke experiment. *See* Eötvös-Dicke experiments
  ether-drift experiments, 1064–1065
  expansion of universe, 707
  geophysical observations, 1061, 1123–1125
  gyroscope precession, 1117–1120
  gravitational (Cavendish) constant, variations of. *See under* Cavendish gravitational constant
  gravitational waves, 1047, 1072
  Hughes-Drever experiment, 1064
  isotropy of space, 1064
  Kreuzer experiment, 1125
  laser ranging to moon, 1048, 1130–1131
  lunar orbit, 1048, 1116, 1119, 1127, 1128–1131
  Newtonian experiments, 1067
  Nordtvedt effect, 1128–1131
  null experiments, 1050, 1064
  perihelion shift, *esp.* 1110–1116
  planetary orbits, deviations from geodesic motion, 1111, 1126–1131
  planetary orbits, periodic effects in, 1069, 1111
  Pound-Rebka-Snider experiment, 1056–1058
  preferred-frame effects, 1098, 1113–1114
  pulsars used for, 1047
  quasars used for, 1047, 1048, 1061, 1101, 1103, 1104–1105
  radar time delay, 1048, 1103, *esp.* 1106–1109
  redshift, gravitational. *See* Redshift, gravitational
  redshift, due to "ether drift," 1064–1065
  singularities in spacetime, existence of, 939
  Turner-Hill experiment, 1064–1065
  See also Parametrized post-Newtonian formalism, Dicke's framework for analyzing experiments, Experimental tests of special relativity
Experimental tests of special relativity, 1054–1055
Exterior calculus
  introduction to and detailed summary of, 91–98
  application to electromagnetism, Chap. 4
  largely unaffected by presence or absence of metric, 233
  extended to vector- and tensor-valued forms, 348–363
  See also specific concepts, e.g., Forms, differential; Exterior derivative; Stokes theorem
Exterior derivative
  introduced, for scalar fields, 93f
  as operation to augment the order of a form, 114–120
  applied twice in succession, automatically gives zero, 116, 118
  results of, 119
  extended to vector- and tensor-valued forms, 348–363, Chap. 15
Exterior product. *See* Wedge product
External field of a gravitating source. *See* Asymptotically flat spacetime geometry
Extrema, number of, 318
Extreme Kerr-Newman geometry, as limiting case of Kerr-Newman, 878
Extremization, of integral for proper time, 316–324
Extrinsic curvature. *See* under Curvature, formalism of
Extrinsic time, of Kuchař and York, 487, 490

F

Factor-ordering problems, 388–391
Faraday. *See under* Electromagnetic field
Faraday stresses, 140f, 481
Fast-motion approximation, 1072–1073
Fermat's principle in a static gravitational field, 1106, 1108
Fermi energy, in neutron stars and white dwarfs, 599–600
Fermi gas, ideal, 565, 599
Fermi normal coordinates, 332
Fermi-Walker transport, 165, 170f, 1117
Feynman's sum over histories, 320, 419, 499f
Field equations. *See* Einstein field equations
Fields, long range (i.e., zero rest mass)
  spin of, deduced from transformation laws for polarization of waves, 954
  radiation fields must have $l \geq S$, 866, 977
  role in slightly nonspherical collapse of a star, 866
  direct coupling vs. indirect coupling, 1063–1064
  direct coupling, experimental searches for, 1063–1065
  indirect coupling, 1068, 1069
Final state of stellar evolution, 624. *See also* White dwarfs, Neutron stars, Black holes
Fine-structure constant, electromagnetic, constancy of, 399, 1061
First law of thermodynamics
  general formulation for a simple fluid, 559–560
  for a fluid in adiabatic flow, 563
  in PPN formalism, 1088
  role in laws of hydrodynamics, 564
  application to pulsating stars, 692
  application to collapsing stars, 858
  application to closed Friedmann universe, 705, 726ff
Fixed-point theorem, 978
Flatness
  test for, 30
  equivalent to zero Riemann curvature, 283–284
  does not imply Euclidean topology, 284
  local, accompanied by global curvature, 190–191
  of space slices in Newton-Cartan spacetime, 291–295
Flatness, asymptotic. *See* Asymptotically flat spacetime
Flat spacetime. *See* Special relativity; Lorentz geometry
"Foamlike" character of space, 419, 480, 1190–1194, 1202
Fluctuations, *See* Quantum fluctuations

Fluid. *See* Hydrodynamics
Flux of particles. *See* Number-flux vector
Flux of energy, defined, 782
Focusing
  of null rays, 582f, 932, 1165
  See also Lens effect
4-Force, Lorentz, 73
Forms, differential
  list of all definitions and formulas, 91–98. *Note:* this list is not indexed here, since it itself is organized like an index!
  machinery for working with, illustrated in context of electromagnetism, Chap. 4
  as intersecting stacks of surfaces, 99–120
  ordered progression of (1-form, 2-form, . . .), 114–120
  closed forms distinguished from general forms, 114–119
  operations on. *See* Duality, Exterior derivative, Integration
  1-forms
    motivated, 53, 55f
    defined, 56f
    illustrated, 55–58
    "corresponding" tangent vector, 58f, 62, 310
    pictorial addition of, 57
    basis. *See* Basis 1-forms
    algebra of, for general basis, 202–203
    in metric-free context, 226, 231–233
    closed, 123
    curl-free, 123
    rotation-free, 123–124
    with rotation, 123
  2-forms
    as machines to construct "number of tubes" from oriented surface, 105–107
    simple, 103
    general, expressible as sum of two simple 2-forms, 103, 122f
    basis 2-forms, in direct and dual labeling, 151
    used in description and calculation of curvature, 337–340, 348–363
  vector-valued and tensor-valued forms, 348–363 and chapter 15
Four-momentum. *See under* Energy-momentum
Four-vector. *See* Vector
Four-velocity. *See* Velocity 4-vector
Friedmann cosmologies. *See under* Cosmological models
Frobenius theorem, on rotation-free 1-forms, 124
Frozen star. *See* Black hole
"Future of." *See* Causal relationships

G

Galaxies
  classification of, 786f, 789, 793, 795
  origin of, 766, 769f
  evolution of, 791
  distribution of, homogeneity vs. hierarchy, 703
  fraction of sky covered by, 799
  nuclei of
    explosions in, 634
    black holes in, 887
    relativistic star clusters in, 634, 687
Galaxy, The (Milky Way), 756–761
  metric correction at, 459
  oscillations of star through disc, analyzed, 318–319
Galilean coordinates, 289, 291–298, 414
Gamma-ray observations, as tests of cosmological models, 770
Gauge transformations and invariance
  in electromagnetism, 89
  in linearized gravitation theory (flat-space spin-2 theory), 180, 182f, 440f, 463
  in perturbations of curved spacetime, 967ff
  See also Lorentz gauge
Gauss-Bonnet theorem, for 2-sphere topology, 309
Gauss-Codazzi relations, 514ff
Gauss-Weingarten equations, for 4-transport
  in terms of extrinsic curvature, 512
Gaussian flux integrals
  for energy-momentum and angular momentum, 460–464
  for charge, 461
Gaussian normal coordinate system, 552, 717
Gauss's theorem, 148–151
  as special case of generalized Stokes theorem, 97
  applied to conservation of energy-momentum, 146, 152
General covariance, principle of, 80, 431f
General relativity
  epitomized briefly, 130 (line 1), 164, 190f, 266, 289
  foundations developed in detail, Chaps. 16, 17
  See also Einstein field equation, Equivalence principle, Experimental tests of general relativity, Geometrodynamics
Generating function, for transformation from one canonical representation of a 2-form to another, 122–123
Geodesics
  track-1 introduction to, 211
  track-2 treatment, in absence of metric, 244–247
  affine parametrization of, 244–246
  as straight-on parallel transport, 245
  as straight lines of local Lorentz geometry, 312–315, 321–324
  as curves of extremal proper length, 314–321, 324
  "dynamic" variational principle for, 322f
  one-parameter family of, 265–267
  can't change from timelike to null or spacelike *en route,* 321
  simple examples
    great circle on sphere, 211f
    straight line on plane, in polar coordinates, 213
  of specific manifolds. *See under the manifold of interest*
  as world lines of freely falling particles, 4, 196
  as tools for building ideal rods and clocks, 396–399
Geodesic deviation
  elementary introduction to, 29–37
  double role: defines curvature, predicts motion, 72
  equation of, presented in track-1 language, 218ff
  equation of, derived, 265–275
  in spacetime of Newton-Cartan, 272f, 293
  in gravitational-wave detector, 444–445, 950–955, 1011f
Geodesic equation 211, 262ff
Geodesic motion
  experimental tests of, 1055–1060
  departures from. *See under* Equations of motion
Geodesic separation vector, 265–270
Geometric objects, 48
  absolute vs. dynamic, and "no prior geometry," 431
  spinor representation of, 1154f
  See also specific objects, e.g., Vectors, Forms, Connection
Geometric units
  introduced, 27ff, 36
  factors of conversion to and from, 36, 638, end papers
Geometric optics
  as limiting case of physical optics, 412
  in extenso, for electromagnetic waves, 570–583
  basic references on, 570n.
  conditions for validity of, 571
  two-length-scale expansion underlying, 571–572
  basic concepts of, 571–582
    summarized, 578–580
    affine parameter of ray, 575
    angular frequency, 575
    bundle of rays, 581–582
    electric field, 579
    magnetic field, 579
    phase, 571, 572, 574–575
    photons, 580, 581
    polarization vector, 573, 574–575, 577, 578, 581
    scalar amplitude, 573
    rays, 573, 574–575
    stress-energy tensor, 579
    wave vector, 573, 574–575
  laws of
    described qualitatively, 571
    summarized in detail, 578–580

photon interpretation of, 580
derived from wave equation and Lorentz gauge condition for vector potential, 573, 576–577
post-geometric optics corrections, 572f, 803f
in spinor language, 1165
examples of applications of, 570
geometry of a bundle of rays, 581–582
focusing equation, 582f
breakdown of, related to pair creation, 803–804
Geometrodynamics (dynamics of geometry)
ideas of, in brief, 4f
built-in plan: initial data plus time evolution, 408f, 484f
some history of, 486–488
analogies with electrodynamics, 364, 367–370
causal propagation of effects in, 554
Arnowitt, Deser, Misner formulation of
in brief, 486–490
action principle in, 521
geometrodynamic field momenta for, 521
3-geometry fixed at surfaces in, 522
split of variables made by, 525–526
electrodynamic analog, 522–524
Dirac formulation of, 520
subject to standard quantum indeterminism, 1182
illustrated in action, for Schwarzschild geometry, 528
See also Einstein field equation, General relativity, Initial value, Integrating forward in time
Geometry. *See specific types:* Spacetime, Euclidean, Lorentz, Differential, Affine, Riemannian, Prior. *See also* Curvature
Geon, 886
Global techniques of analyzing spacetime structure
in extenso, Chap. 34
basic references on, 916–917
examples of, 926–931
attempt to combine with local methods, 806
See also Infinity, regions of, in asymptotically flat spacetime; Causal structure of spacetime; Singularities in spacetime
Globular clusters, 757
black holes in, 887
"Glory," in particle scattering, 670
Gowdy metrics, 804
Gradient
of a scalar, in flat spacetime, 59f
of a tensor, in flat spacetime, 81f
in a curved manifold, 208–212, 259–261
See also Exterior derivative
Gradiometer, gravity, 400–403
Gravitation, 13, 163–164
local description in terms of tide-producing acceleration, 29–37
Gravitation-matter "coupling loop," in brief, 5, 37
Gravitation, theories of
catalogs of, 429
criteria for viability of, 1066–1067
Bergmann's scalar-tensor theories, 1049
Birkhoff's, 1067
Cartan's (general relativity plus torsion), 1049, 1068
Cartan-Newton. *See* Newton-Cartan theory of gravity
Coleman's, 1114
completeness of, 1067, 1068
conservative, 1093
Dicke-Brans-Jordan, 1048f, 1068f, *esp.* 1070, 1093, 1098, 1122, 1127, 1129
cosmological models in, 770
general relativity, foundations of, Chaps. 16, 17
Kustaanheimo's, 1067
linearized. *See* Linearized theory of gravity
metric. *See* Metric theories of gravity
metric, not encompassed by the 10-parameter PPN formalism, 1069
Newtonian. *See* Newton-Cartan theory of gravity
Ni's, 1068f, *esp.* 1070f, 1083, 1098, 1123, 1129
Nordstrøm's, 429ff, 1049
Papapetrou's, 1124
post-Newtonian. *See* Post-Newtonian approximation; Post-Newtonian formalism, parametrized
preferred-frame, 1083, 1093, 1098, 1123–1125
prior-geometric, 429–431, 1068, 1070–1071
self-consistency of, 1066–1067
spin-0 field, in flat spacetime, 178f
spin-1 field, in flat spacetime, 179
spin-2 field, in flat spacetime. *See* Linearized theory of gravity
Whitehead's, 430, 1049, 1067, 1069, 1124
Gravitational collapse. *See* Collapse, gravitational
Gravitational constant
value of, 29, endpapers
measurement of, 1121, 1123
as measure of "metric elasticity of space," 426–428
See also Cavendish gravitational constant
"Gravitational field" in general relativity theory
as term with many meanings and none, 399f
spacetime geometry as, 399–400
metric as, 399f
covariant derivative and connection coefficients as, 387, 399–400
Riemann curvature as, 399–403
contribution of, to standard stress-energy tensor, specifically excluded, 131
Gravitational lens effect, 589, 887
Gravitational mass, 431
Gravitational potential. *See under* Newton-Cartan theory, Post-Newtonian formalism
Gravitational radiation reaction. *See* Gravitational waves; radiation reaction
Gravitational radius, 820–826. *See also* Horizon, Black hole, Schwarzschild geometry, Kerr-Newman geometry
Gravitational-wave detectors
conceivable types of
Earth-moon separation, 1013, 1014, 1018
normal-mode vibrations of Earth and moon, 1013, 1015
oscillations of Earth's crust, 1013, 1015
normal-mode vibrations of an elastic bar, 1013, 1016, 1025, 1035, 1038
normal-mode vibrations of general elastic bodies, 1013, 1016, 1025, 1028–1035, 1041–1042
angular accelerations of rotating bars ("heterodyne detector"), 1013, 1016–1017
angular accelerations of driven oscillators, 1013, 1017
pumping of fluid in a rotating pipe, 1013, 1018
idealized vibrator (2 masses on a spring), 1022–1028
beads on stick, 444f
nonmechanical detectors, 1040
electromagnetic waves in a toroidal wave guide, 1043–1044
methods of analyzing (for mechanical detectors small compared to wavelength)
proper reference frame of detector, 1005–1006, 1010, 1012
dynamic analysis: Newtonian equation of motion plus wave driving forces, 1006–1009
driving forces of waves, 1006, 1009, 1010
line-of-force diagram, 1011–1012
method of detailed balance, 1028, 1029–1030, 1033
for noisy detector, 1019, 1036–1040
detailed analysis of
two freely falling bodies, 1018
idealized vibrator (two masses on a spring), 1022–1028
any resonant vibrator, analyzed by detailed balance, 1030, 1033
any resonant vibrator, analyzed by dynamic method, 1031–1034
noisy resonant vibrator (extraction of signal from noise), 1036–1040
Earth vibrating in quadrupole mode, 1035–1036
electromagnetic waves in a toroidal wave guide, 1043–1044
cross sections
limits on usefulness of concept of cross section, 1019, 1022

Gravitational-wave detectors (*continued*)
summary of ways to use, for wave-dominated detectors, 1020–1021
used to calculate total energy deposited in detector, 1027, 1028
use of, for noisy detectors, 1038–1039
related to emission patterns, 1032–1033, 1035
for idealized vibrator, 1024, 1025
for any resonant, mechanical detector, 1025, 1029, 1032
for a Weber bar, 1025
for a Weber bar in multimode operation, 1035
for Earth in fundamental quadrupole mode, 1036
thermally noisy detectors
extraction of small signal from noise, 1036–1040
sensitivity of, to hammer-blow waves, 1039
ways to improve sensitivity, 1040
sensors for monitoring displacements, 1041, 1042
prospects for the future, 1040ff
Gravitational waves
exact solutions
cylindrical wave, 950
plane waves with one state of polarization, 957–963. *See also* Plane gravitational waves
plane waves with two polarization states, 964
experimental tests of general relativity using, 1047, 1072
generation by slow-motion, weak-field sources
nonexistence of monopole and dipole waves, 974–978
waves are predominantly quadrupolar, 975–978
assumptions underlying formulas, 989, 991
formula for metric perturbation, 991
formulas for emitted flux of energy and angular momentum, 992
formulas for total output of energy and angular momentum, 975, 992
formulas for radiation reaction in source, 993–994
formulas for spectrum in various polarization states, 1033, 1035
formulas specialized to impulse events, 987
order-of-magnitude formulas for, 978–979, 980–981
derivation of formulas, 995–1003
role of "gravitational stresses" in generation, 996–998
generation by strong-field sources, techniques for calculating
particle falling into black hole, by perturbations of Schwarzschild metric, 982, 983
vibrations of a relativistic star, by perturbations of equilibrium stellar structure, 984–985
rotation of a deformed relativistic star, by perturbations of spherical stellar structure, 986
initial-value solutions for, 536
intensity and spectrum of waves that bathe Earth, estimate of, 986
linearized theory of
in extenso, 944–955
Lorentz gauge condition, 944–945
propagation equation, 945
gauge transformations that maintain Lorentz gauge, 945
plane-wave solutions, 945–946, 949, 1004–1005
transverse-traceless gauge 946–950
methods to calculate transverse-traceless part, 948–949
Riemann tensor, 948
geodesic deviation, 950–955, 1011–1012
relative accelerations are purely transverse, 951
polarization, 952–955
Fourier analysis of, 1026, 1027
specific flux of, 1027
monopole and dipole waves absolutely forbidden, 977, 978
nonlinear interaction of waves with themselves
nonexistence of precisely periodic waves, 956
self-gravitational attraction, 957, 968
wave-wave scattering, 968
propagation through curved spacetime
analogy with water waves on ocean, 993–994
refraction of wave fronts (deflection of rays) by background curvature, 956, 968, 972
gravitational redshift of frequency, 956–957, 968
backscatter off curvature, 957, 864–865, 869–871
tails due to interaction with background curvature, 957, 864–865, 869–871
shock fronts, 554
shortwave formalism for, 964–973. *See also* Gravitational waves: shortwave formalism
propagation equation, 967–968
stress-energy tensor, 969–970. *See also* Gravitational waves: stress-energy tensor for
geometric optics formalism, 971–972
propagation of polarization tensor, 968, 971
spinor formalism for, 1165
See also Gravitational waves: nonlinear interaction of waves with themselves
radiation reaction
order-of-magnitude formulas for, 979, 981
formalism for calculating, in weak-field, slow-motion sources, 993ff, 1001ff
linked to outgoing-wave condition, 993, 1001–1002
forbids existence of exactly periodic waves, 956
damping of neutron-star vibrations by, 620, 628, 984f
evolution of binary-star orbits due to, 988
shortwave formalism
"steady" coordinates, 964
expansion parameters of, 964
assumptions underlying, 964
expansion of Ricci tensor, 964–965
coarse-grain viewpoint vs. fine-grain viewpoint, 965
propagation equation, 967–968
gauge freedom, 967–969
Lorentz gauge, 968
transverse-traceless gauge, 969
stress-energy tensor, 969–970. *See also* Gravitational waves: stress-energy tensor
Brill-Hartle averaging process, 970
geometric optics specialization, 971–972
variational principle used to derive, 972–973
sources of
astrophysical sources, order-of-magnitude formulas for, 980–981
big-bang origin of universe, 712, 736–737, 764–765
gravitational collapse of a star, 628, 629, 1041
supernova explosions, 982, 1040, 1042
explosion of a star, 987
collapses and explosions in Virgo cluster of galaxies, 1042
vibrations of neutron star, 982–986
rotation of a deformed neutron star (young pulsar), 628f, 983, 986, 1040
binary stars, 986, 988–990, 995
fall of matter into a black hole, 885, 982, 983, 986
collision and coalescence of black holes, 886, 939, 982
vibrations of a black hole, 886
rotating steel beam, 979–980
fission of an atomic nucleus, 987
atomic bomb, 987
meteorite striking earth, 987
stress-energy tensor for
elementary summary of, 955–956
expressed in terms of metric perturbations, 969

expression for in traceless Lorentz gauge, 970
gauge invariance of, 972
expressed as an average of stress-energy pseudotensor, 972
divergence vanishes, 970
as source for background curvature of spacetime, 966, 973
for geometric-optics waves, 972
for waves in nearly flat spacetime, 955–956
for exact plane wave, 963
Gravitons, 972
Gravity gradiometer, 400–403
Group. *See* Rotation group; Lorentz group
Group of motions, 652–653. *See also* Killing vector fields
Gyroscopes
employed in definition of Fermi-Walker transport, 165
employed in constructing proper reference frame, 327, 330f
precession of, as experimental test of general relativity, 1117–1120
See also Dragging of inertial frames
Gyromagnetic ratio, of Kerr-Newman black hole, 883, 892

H

HII regions in galaxies, 710, 761, 786f
Hair on a billiard ball, 978
Hair on a hole. *See* Kerr-Newman geometry, uniqueness of
"Hammer-blow waves" defined, 1019
Hamilton-Jacobi theory, 486ff, 641–649
relation to quantum theory, 641–643
for harmonic oscillator, 1194
for free particle, 1194
for test-particle motion
in Newtonian M/r potential, 644–649
in Schwarzschild gravitational field, 649
in Kerr-Newman gravitational and electromagnetic fields, 900–901
deflection of light by sun, in PPN formalism, 1102f
perihelion shift in PPN formalism, 1114f
for electrodynamics, 1195
for geometrodynamics in superspace, 423f, 1180–1190
Hamiltonian
contrasted with super-Hamiltonian, for charged particle in field, 488–489
electromagnetic, 497
for test-particle in Newtonian $1/r$ potential, 644
See also Super-Hamiltonian
Hamiltonian, ADM, applied to mixmaster cosmology, 809
Hamiltonian dynamics,
in the language of forms, 125–126
symplectic structure of, 126
Hamilton's principle for geodesic motion, 654
Harrison-Wheeler equation of state, 625
Harrison-Wakano-Wheeler stellar models, 625ff, 696
Hat product. *See* Wedge product
Heat flow in general relativity
references on, 559
heat-flux 4-vector, 567
law of thermal conductivity, 567
in a stationary gravitational field, 568
Hilbert's variational principle. *See* Variational principle, Hilbert's
Histories,
space of, 318–319
democracy of, 320
sum over, 320, 419, 499f
"History of geometry," defined, 418–419
Holonomic basis, 204, 210, 239
Homologous pulsations of a star, 697, 1079
Honeycomb structure. *See* Forms
Horizons, in black-hole physics
definition of, 923–924
global structure of (theorem), 924–925
global structure analyzed, 926–931
caustics of, 925
generators of, 903–904, 925, 929–931, 932
created by gravitational collapse, 862, 863, 867, 924
for Kerr-Newman geometry, 879ff
angular velocity of, 914
area of, 889, 914
generators of, 903f
Horizons, in cosmology, 815f
in Friedmann cosmologies, 740ff, 815
Hubble expansion rate, 709f
history of knowledge of, 709–710, 758–761
expressed in terms of expansion factor $a\ (t)$, 732
distance-redshift relation used in measuring, 780–781
relationship to other cosmological parameters, 771–773
See also under Cosmological models, Cosmology
Hughes-Drever experiment, 1064
Hydrodynamics
Newtonian, in absence of gravity, 152ff
Newtonian, in presence of gravity, 387f, 1077–1080
post-Newtonian. *See under* PPN formalism
general relativistic
basic references, 562n, 568
for a simple fluid with no heat flow or viscosity, 562–563
for a fluid with viscosity and heat flow, 567–568
volume changes related to divergence of flow lines, 565
gradient of 4-velocity resolved into 4-acceleration, expansion, rotation, and shear, 566
Euler equation, 564
equilibrium in a stationary gravitational field, 566, 568
interaction of charged matter with an electromagnetic field, 570
See also Thermodynamics, laws of
Hydrostatic equilibrium
in any stationary gravitational field, 566
in static, spherical star, 601–602, 605
Oppenheimer-Volkoff equation of, 605
buoyant force, 606
Hyperbolic motion of an accelerated observer, 166ff, 173f
Hypersurface, spacelike. *See* Spacelike slice

I

Imaginary time coordinate not used, 51
Ideal gas, 139f
Impact parameter
for hyperbolic, Newtonian orbit, 647
for hyperbolic orbit in Schwarzschild field, 670
for photon in Schwarzschild field, 672
for photon in PPN formalism, 1101f
Identity, as automatically fulfilled conservation law, 405
Index, contravariant and covariant, 76
Index manipulations
in global Lorentz frames, 85
in curved, Riemannian manifolds, 201–204, 223f
in affine manifolds, 225f
in linearized theory, 436
Induction, from electromagnetic 4-potential, 122
Inertia, 460
Inertial forces, 165, 332
in Newton-Cartan theory, 294
Inertial frames, dragging of. *See* Dragging of inertial frames.
Inertial guidance, 247
Inertial mass, 159f, 431, 1051
Inertial reference frame, local ($\equiv$ local Lorentz frame if orthonormal coordinates are used), 18f
defined by uniform velocity of free test particles, 23
used in analysis of tide-producing acceleration, 29–37
mathematical representation of. *See* Riemann normal coordinates
See also Lorentz frame, local
Infinitesimal Lorentz transformation. *See* Lorentz transformation, infinitesimal
Infinity, regions of, in asymptotically flat spacetime
I^+, I^-, I^0, $\mathscr{I}^+$, $\mathscr{I}^-$ defined, 917–918
conformal transformations of, 919–921, 936
conformally transformed coordinate diagrams, 919–921

Initial-value data
as uniquely determining future, Hilbert on, 434
mystery of what fixes them, 555
formulation of, on characteristic hypersurface, 554
Initial-value data for geometrodynamics
in extenso, Chap. 21
required for dynamics, 484–485
compatible on spacelike slice, 489–490
on characteristic surface, 490
thin-sandwich conjecture, 534
count of, 529–533
time and dynamic data mixed in 3-geometry, 533
improperly posed data, 534–535
separation of time and dynamic data, 533
York's formulation of
sketched, 490
on hypersurface of zero or constant extrinsic time, 539–540
gives conformal 3-geometry, 540–541
gives York's curvature, 541
gives conjugate York momenta, 542
Initial-value equations for geometrodynamics, 515–516, 519, 525, 531–535
Initial-value problem for geometrodynamics
York's formulation of
wave equation for conformal factor, 542
existence and uniqueness of solutions, 543
thin-sandwich formulation of
as option in specifying data, 529
electrodynamic analog, 529
as guide in counting degrees of freedom, 529–533
as guide to geometrodynamics, 529–531
time-symmetric case, 490
formulated, 535
role of base metric in, 535
gravitational wave amplitude in, 536
wave equation for conformal correction factor, 535
time-antisymmetric case, 490
formulated, 536
wave equation for conformal correction factor, 536
mass of wave is positive, 536
other symmetric cases
Friedmann universe, 537, 705f, 727f, 744
mixmaster universe, 537, 806–811
waves with cylindrical symmetry, 537
waves with spherical symmetry, 537
pulsating star, 691–694
as route to cosmology, 537
See also Geometrodynamics, Integrating forward in time
Initial-value theory for electrodynamics, 523f, 526, 529ff. *See also* Electrodynamics, Integrating forward in time
Injection energy, 561, 562
Integral conservation law, 146
Integrating forward in time
geometrodynamic equation
statement of initial data in, 526–527
options in choice of lapse and shift, 527–528
compared to electrodynamics, 527–528
Maxwell's equations
statement of initial data in, 527
options in choice of potential, 527
as guide to geometrodynamics, 527
See also Electrodynamics, Geometrodynamics, Initial value
Integration
of differential forms, 94–97, 150f
of tensors, in track-1 language, 147ff
See also Stokes' theorem, Gauss's theorem, Volume
Interference, constructive and destructive, 419, 423f, 1185–1187
Interferometry, used to measure deflection of radio waves by sun, 1104–1105
Intergalactic matter, mean density of, 712, 761f
Interval, Lorentz, 19–23
Intrinsic curvature. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
Intrinsic time of Sharp, Baierlein, and Wheeler, 487, 490
Invariants
of electromagnetic field, 110, 480–483
of Riemann tensor, 491
Irreducible mass of a black hole, 889f, 913
Isolated system, 454
Isometry, 652–653. *See also* Killing vector fields
Isostasy, 402
Isothermal star clusters, 685ff
Isotropic coordinates
for a star, 595
for Schwarzschild geometry, 840
in post-Newtonian approximation, 1097
Isotropy and homogeneity of universe
in extenso, Chap. 30
man could not exist in an anisotropic universe, 939
adiabatic cooling of anisotropy, 802
viscous dissipation of anisotropy, 769, 802–803
pair creation by anisotropy energy, 769, 803–804
See also Cosmological models; Cosmology
Isotropy implies homogeneity, 715, 723

J

Jacobi identity, for commutators, 240
Jacobian, 93, 148, 160f
Jacob's ladder. *See* Schild's ladder
Jeans instability, 757
Junction conditions, 490
from electrodynamics as guide, 551
relevant components of Einstein field equation, 552
surface stress-energy tensor, 552–553
intrinsic geometry continuous, 553
extrinsic curvature may jump, 554
across null surface, 554
and motion of surface layer, 555
applied to collapsing shell of dust, 555–556
applied to surface of a collapsing star, 852–853
Jupiter, motion of satellites, 637

K

K'ai-feng observatory, ii
Kasner cosmological model, 801, 805ff
Keplerian orbits in Newtonian field of a point mass, 647–649
analyzed using Hamilton-Jacobi theory, 644–649
effective potential for, 661
"Kepler density" from satellite period, 44
Kepler's laws,
discovery by Kepler, 755
"1-2-3" law, 39, 450, 457
Kernel, of wave operator, 121
Kerr coordinates, 879f
Kerr diagram, 881
Kerr geometry, as limiting case of Kerr-Newman, 878
Kerr-Newman geometry and electromagnetic field
history of, 877n
parameters of (M, Q, $\boldsymbol{S}$, or a), 878
limiting cases (Schwarzschild, Reissner-Nordstrøm, Kerr, extreme Kerr-Newman), 878
uniqueness as external field of a black hole
heuristic explanation of uniqueness, 875, 877
theorems implying uniqueness, 876, 938, 939
implications for realistic gravitational collapse, 863
Boyer-Lindquist coordinates
metric, 877, 878
electromagnetic field tensor, 877, 878
vector potential, 898
pathology of, at horizon, 880
Kerr coordinates
electromagnetic field tensor, 879
metric, 879
transformation between Kerr and Boyer-Lindquist coordinates, 879f
Kerr-Schild coordinates, 903
stationary observers, 893–894
locally nonrotating observers, 895–896
Kerr diagram for, 881
maximal analytic extension of, 882
Killing vectors, 879, 892ff
Killing tensor, 893
principal null congruences, 901–904

light cones, 891, 896–897
electromagnetic-field structure, 877ff, 883, 892
magnetic dipole moment, 883, 892
multipole moments of, 883, 892
horizon, 879ff
null generators of, 903–904
area of, 889, 914
angular velocity of, 914
rotational properties
intrinsic angular momentum vector, 891
gyromagnetic ratio, 883, 892
static limit, 879ff, 894
ergosphere, 880
dragging of inertial frames, 879ff, 893–896
dynamic properties
role as endpoint of gravitational collapse, 882–883
stability against small perturbations, 884–885
change of *M, Q, S* when particles fall into horizon, 904–910, 913
reversible and irreversible transformations of, 889–890
rotational energy of, 890
electromagnetic energy of, 890
irreducible mass, 889–890, 913
test-particle motion in,
super-Hamiltonian for, 897
energy-at-infinity, 898–899, 910
axial component of angular momentum, 898–899
rest-mass of particle, 899
Carter's fourth constant of the motion, $\mathscr{Q}$ or $\mathscr{K}$, 899
equations of motion in separated form, 899–900, 901
Hamilton-Jacobi derivation of equations of motion, 900–901
orbits in equatorial plane, 911–912
effective potential for equatorial motion, 911
binding energy of last stable circular orbit, 885, 911
wave propagation in, 914–915
Kerr-Schild coordinates, 903
Killing vector fields, 650–653
associated conservation laws for test-particle motion, 651
commutator of is Killing vector, 654
eigenvalue problem for finding, 654
for flat spacetime, 654
for spherically symmetric manifolds, 658
for Kerr-Newman geometry, 879, 892ff
Killing's equation, 650
Killing tensor field, 893n
Kinetic theory in curved spacetime
in extenso, 583–590
basic laws
Liouville's theorem for noninteracting particles in curved spacetime, 584, 586–587, 590
collisionless Boltzmann equation (kinetic equation), 587, 590.
specialized to photons, 587–589
basic concepts
mass hyperboloid, 585
momentum space, 583ff, 590
phase space, 584f, 590
volume in phase space, 584–587, 590
distribution function (number density in phase space) defined, 583f, 590
applications, 583
elementary expression for pressure, 139–140
stress-energy tensor as integral over momentum space, 589f
photons, 587ff
relativistic star clusters, 679–687
computation of optical appearance of a collapsing star, 850
Klein-Alfven cosmology, 748, 770
Kronecker delta, 22
Kruskal diagrams, 528, 834f, 839, 848, 855
Kruskal-Szekeres coordinates for Schwarzschild geometry, 828–832
metric in, 827
relationship to Schwarzschild coordinates, 833–835

L

Lagrangian perturbations, 690–691
Lamb-Retherford shift, principal mechanism, 1190
Landau-Lifshitz pseudotensor. *See* Pseudotensor
Laplace operator, vs. d'Alembertian, 177
Lapse function
as Lagrange multiplier, 487
metric interval as fixed by, 507
covariant and contravariant forms of, 507–508
award of arbitrariness in, reversed, 532
variational principle for, 538
Laser ranging to moon, 1048, 1130f
Lattice. *See* Clocks; Rods
Laws of physics in curved spacetime, 384–393. *See also specific laws, e.g.,* Kinetic theory, Hydrodynamics, Conservation laws
Leap second, 28
Least action, principle of
applied in elementary Hamiltonian mechanics, 125–126
related to extremal time, 315–324
Lens effect, 589, 795f, 887
Levi-Civita tensor
in flat spacetime, 87f
orientation of, 87f
in general basis, 202, 207
in spherical coordinates, 206
Lie derivative
of a vector, 240
of a tensor, 517
independent of any affine connection, 517
Lie groups, 198
Lie transport law, 240
Light, bending of. *See* Deflection of light.
Light cone
characterization of advanced and retarded potentials, 122
Newton-Cartan vs. Einstein difference, 297
See also Causal relationships
Line element. *See* Metric
Lines of force
relation to honeycomb structure, 102
never end, as core of Maxwell's equations, 420
diagram for gravitational waves, 1011f
Linearized theory of gravity (*same as* Spin-2 theory in flat spacetime)
equivalence of the two theories spelled out, 435
presentation from spin-2 viewpoint, 179–186
presentation as linearized limit of general relativity, Chap. 18, 448–451, 461–464, 944–955
sketched, 435
bar operation, 436–438
field equations, 437–438, 461f
formula for metric, 438
gauge transformations, 438–441
gauge invariance of Riemann curvature, 438
Lorentz gauge, 438, 441
global Lorentz transformations, 439
curvilinear coordinates, 441
effect of gravity on matter and photons, 442–444
self-inconsistency of, 180, 186, 443f
complete repair of, leads to general relativity, 186, 424f
partial repair for slow-motion systems leads to Newtonian and post-Newtonian formalisms, 1073–1078, 1089f
applications
external field of static spherical body, 438
external field of any source, 448–451, 461–464
bending of light, redshift, perihelion advance, 183ff, 446
gravitational waves, 185f, 442, 444f, 944–955. *See also under* Gravitational waves
Liouville's theorem, 584, 586f, 590
Local physics is simple physics, 4, 19, 29f
Local inertial frame. *See* Inertial frame, local
Local Lorentz frame. *See* Lorentz frame, local
Locally nonrotating observers, 895–896
Lorentz contraction, 48

Lorentz force law
compared equation of geodesic deviation, 35
formulated, in flat spacetime, 73
energy change associated with, 73
double role: defines fields and predicts motions, 71–74
in language of forms, 101–104
in language of energy-momentum conservation, 155
in curved spacetime, 201, 568
for a continuous medium, 570
derived from Einstein's field equations, 473–475
in three languages, 474
Lorentz frame, local
closest to global Lorentz frame, 207
mathematical representations of, 217f, 285ff, 314f
straight lines are geodesics of curved spacetime, 312–324
evidences for acceleration relative to, 327
used to analyze redshift experiments, 1056–1060
See also Inertial frame, local
Lorentz gauge. *See* Gauge transformations and invariance
Lorentz geometry, global, 19–23
contrasted with Euclidean geometry, 51
spacetime possesses, if and only if ***Riemann*** vanishes, 284
Lorentz group, 242
Lorentz invariance, experimental tests of, 1054f
Lorentz transformations, 66–69
key points, 67f
matrix description of, 66
way to remember index positions, 66
velocity parameter in, 67
boost, 67, 69
rotation in a coordinate plane, 67
infinitesimal
antisymmetric matrix for, 171
generator of, 329
special case: boost along coordinate axis, 80
in spin-matrix language, 1142–1145
velocity parameter, 1145
post-Newtonian limit of, 1086
used to annul Poynting flux, 122
See also Rotations
Lowering indices. *See* Index manipulations
Lunar orbit, experimental tests of general relativity using, 1048, 1116, 1119, 1127–1131

M

Machine with slots. *See under* Covariant derivative, Metric, Tensor
Mach's principle, 490, 543–545
acceleration relative to distant stars, 543
and York's formulation of initial-value problem, 546
gives inertia here in terms of mass there, 546
and Foucault pendulum, 547
and dragging of inertial frames, 547. *See also* Dragging of inertial frames
dragging analogous to magnetic effect, 548
inertial influence of distant stars, 548
sum-for-inertia in, 549
"flat" space as part of closed space in, 549
Magnetic flux, from integration of ***Faraday,*** 99–101
Magnetic poles, absence of, 80
Magnetostatics, plus covariance, gives magnetodynamics, 80, 106
"Magnitude, absolute," defined, 786
"Magnitude, apparent," defined, 782
Magnitude-redshift relation. *See under* Cosmology, observational probes of standard model
Manifold, differentiable, 10, 13, 241ff
Many-fingered time, and arbitrariness in slice through spacetime, 713f, 1184
Mass
active vs. passive. *See* Cavendish gravitational constant
center of, 161
experimental, finite, as difference between two infinities, 474–475
inertial, density of, 159f
inertial vs. gravitational, 431, 1051 *See also* Uniqueness of free fall
"Mass-energy inside radius r," 602ff, 858f
Mass-energy, density of. *See* Stress-energy tensor
Mass-energy, total, of an isolated, gravitating system ($\equiv$ "active gravitational mass")
defined by rate metric approaches flatness
in extenso, Chap. 19
in linearized theory, 448–450
in general, 453, 455
no meaning of, for closed universe, 457–459
as geometric object residing in asymptotically flat spacetime, 453
measured via Kepler's 1-2-3 law, 450, 457, 636ff
contribution of gravitational field to, 467
not localizable in generic case, 466ff
precisely localizable only for spherical systems, 603f, 803f
localizable to within a wavelength for gravitational waves, 955f, 964ff, 969f
conservation law for, 455, 468–471
See also under Energy-momentum
Mass hyperboloid, 585
Matter in universe, luminous, mean density of, 710f, 761
Matrix, inverse, explicit expression for, 161. *See also* Jacobian, Determinant
Maxima, number of, 318
Maximal analytic extension of a geometry, 882
Maxwell, dual 2-form representation of electromagnetic field, introduced, 105. *See under* Electromagnetic field
Maxwell energy density, 140–141
Maxwell's equations
component version in flat spacetime, 80f
geometric version, 88–89
in language of forms, 112–114
solution for particle in an arbitrary state of motion, 121–122
in curved spacetime, 391, 568
for vector potential, 569
deduced from "lines of force end only on charge," 79–81
derived from physics on a spacelike slice, 419–420
derived from stress-energy and Einstein field equation, 471–473
and conservation of energy-momentum, 483
nowhere failing, 1200
See also Electrodynamics, Lorentz force law
Mean eccentric anomaly, 648
Measurability of geometry and fields in classical theory, 13
Measurement, possibilities defined by theory, 1184
Measuring rods. *See* Rods
Mercury, perihelion precession of. *See* Perihelion shift
Meshing of local Lorentz frames, 190–191
Metric
distilled from distances, 306–309
descriptions
summarized, 77, 305, 310f
as machine with slots, 22, 51–53, 77, 305, 310f
in component language, 77, 310f
in terms of basis 1-forms, 77, 310
as line element, 77, 305, 310
introduced and defined, 22
components of
in arbitrary basis, 201, 310f
in Euclidean coordinates, 22
in Lorentz coordinates, 22, 53
determinant of components
defined, 202
differentiated, gives contraction of connection coefficients, 222
variation of, 503
computation of connection coefficients from, 210, 216
compatibility with covariant derivative, 313ff, 353f
structure, and symplectic structure, 126
enters electromagnetism only in concept of duality, 105, 114
role in spacetime of general relativity
measured by light signals and free particles, 324

as "gravitational field," 399–400
test for local Lorentz character, 311–312
components not all predicted by geometrodynamic law, 409
role in Newton-Cartan spacetime, 300, 302
coefficients in specific manifolds and frames. *See specific manifolds, e.g.,* Sphere, 3-dimensional; Schwarzschild geometry, *or coordinate systems, e.g.,* Kerr-Schild coordinates
Metric elasticity of space, 426–428
Metric theories of gravity, 1067ff
experiments to test whether the correct theory is metric, Chap. 38, 1067
PPN formalism as approximation to, 1069
Microwave radiation. *See* Cosmic microwave radiation.
Minima, number of, 318
Minkowski geometry. *See* Lorentz geometry
Missing matter, "mystery of," 710. *See also under* Cosmology
Mixmaster universe, 805–814.
Mixmaster oscillations damp chaos, 769
Möbius strip, 96
Moment of inertia tensor defined, 977
Moment of rotation
as meaning of Einstein curvature, 373–377
conservation of, 378ff, 473
"Moment of time" means "spacelike hypersurface," 713–714, 1184
Momentum, in mechanics, as space rate of change of action, 486–487
Momentum field, electromagnetic, 497f, 524
Momentum space, 583ff, 590
Momentum vector. *See* Energy-momentum 4-vector
Moon
effect on tides, 44
shadow on Earth, 24–26
laser ranging to, 1048, 1130f
orbit of, tests of general relativity using, 1048, 1116, 1119, 1127–1131
separation from Earth as gravitational-wave detector, 1013f, 1018
Morse theory, 318
Mössbauer effect, 63, 1056, 1057
Motion. *See* Equations of motion
Moving frame. *See* Tetrad
Multicomponent fluid, 558
Multipole expansion of Newtonian potential, 991
Multipole moments of Kerr-Newman black hole, 883, 892

N

Near zone for radiation theory, 997, 999–1000
Neutral stability, 697
"Neutral relationship to." *See* Causal relationships
Neutrinos
emitted in stellar collapse, 599
transport energy in collapsing star, 628
redshift when emitted by a collapsing star, 850
from big-bang, 712, 736–737, 764–765
damp anisotropy of expansion, 803
formalism for analyzing in curved spacetime, 1164
Neutron-star matter, 599
idealized as simple fluid, 558
equations of state for, 624–626
Neutron stars, 619f, 622
models for, 625–627
mass limits, 627
rotation of, 628
as source of gravitational waves, 983, 986, 1040
pulsation of, 628
as source of gravitational waves, 982–986
stability of 626–627, 696
creation by stellar collapse, 627–629
Newman-Penrose constants, 870f
Newton-Cartan theory of gravity
contrasted with Einstein's theory, 3ff, 197, 245, 297f, 302f
incompatibility with special relativity, 177, 304
standard Newtonian formulation of
in brief, 177, 301
as approximation to general relativity, 412–416
as approximation to metric theories of gravity, 1077f, 1097
useful formulas and computational techniques, 1078f
virial theorems, 1079
stress tensor for Newtonian gravitational field, 1078f
Cartan's curved-spacetime formulation of
in extenso, Chap. 12
in brief, in language of Galilean coordinates, 289f
in brief, in coordinate-free language, 300f
transition between languages, 298f
transition between Newton formulation and Cartan formulation, 289f, 299
Noise, extraction of signals from, 1036ff. *See also* Gravitational-wave detectors
Nonlocalizability of gravitational energy. *See under* Mass-energy, total; Energy-momentum; Pseudotensor
Nonorientable surface, 96
Nordstrøm's theories of gravity. *See under* Gravitation, theories of
Nordtvedt effect, 1128–1131
Norm of a p-form, 97
Normal, unit normal in terms of lapse and shift, 508
Normal coordinate system, 1055
Nothing, as foundation of everything
Leibniz on, 1219
geometrodynamics as early model for, 1202–1203
calculus of propositions as a later model for, 1209, 1211–1212
Novikov coordinates, 826f
Nuclear burning in stars
drives pulsational instability, 632
HCNO cycle, 632
catalyzed to endpoint, 624–626
formulation of thermodynamics in presence of, 558
Number-flux vector
introduced, 138–139
for photons in geometric optics limit, 580
Number-flux relation, in cosmology, 798
Number space, 241
Nuclear matter. *See* Neutron-star matter
Nucleosynthesis in big bang, 760, 762
Null experiments, 1050, 1064

O

Observational cosmology, Chap. 29. *See under* Cosmology
One-form. *See under* Forms, differential
Optics. *See* Geometric optics
Olber's paradox, 756
Oppenheimer-Volkoff equation of hydrostatic equilibrium, 605
Oppenheimer-Snyder model for collapsing star, 851–856
Orbit, *See* Keplerian orbits. Planetary orbits. *See also geometry in which the orbits occur, e.g.,* Schwarzschild geometry
Orientation
of space, embodied in duality operation, 97
of forms
1-form, illustrated, 55
2-form, illustrated, 100, 104, 107, 109, 116
3-form, 117
of volumes, 133, 135f, 147–150
relative, of domain and its boundary, 96

P

Pair production
by photon, 70
at high temperatures, 558
by tidal gravitational forces, 750, 769, 803f, 816
damps anisotropies of geometry, 769, 803f
Pairs
free-fall of, experimental test, 1051
in early stages of standard cosmological model, 736f, 764

Parallax, 757
Parallel transport
  in brief, 208f
  in extenso, 245–263
  equation of, summarized, 224
  illustrated, 209, 212
  See also Fermi-Walker transport
Parallelepiped, trivector and 1-form representation of, 133, 135–136
Parametrization, of geodesic, 244–246
Parametrized post-Newtonian formalism
  history of, 1049, 1073
  described qualitatively, 1049, 1068f, 1072f
  summary of technical details, 1092
  notation, 1073f, 1092f
  accuracy and realm of validity, 1069, 1072f, 1075
  metric theories encompassed by and not encompassed by, 1069
  parameters
    described qualitatively, 1069, 1072
    defined precisely, 1080f
    translated from one convention to another, 1093
    values for several theories, 1072
  parameters, experimental limits on
    γ, 1103, 1105, 1108f
    β, 1111, 1113
    $\alpha_3 = 4\beta, - 2\gamma - 2 - \zeta$, 1114
    $\alpha_2 - \Delta_2 + \zeta - 1$, 1124
    $\alpha_3 = 4\beta, - 2\gamma - 2 - \zeta$, 1125
  foundations of
    coordinates of, 1073f, 1082–1087, 1089, 1091, 1097
    expansion parameters and their magnitudes in the solar system, 1068, 1075
    radiation zone excluded from, 1075
    time derivatives small compared to space derivatives, 1075
    shear stresses typically negligible, 1074f
    expansion procedure, 1075ff
    metric coefficients, pattern of, 1076f, 1080, 1100
  description of matter
    thermodynamic functions in, 1074f
    velocity of matter, 1073f, 1086
    transformation between coordinate frame and rest frame of matter, 1087
    stress-energy tensor, 1086f
  matter generates gravity
    gravitational potentials (functions appearing in metric), 1080f, 1085
    nonlinear superposition of gravitational fields, 1096
    identities relating potentials to each other, 1082, 1089
    metric coefficients, precise form of, 1084f
    Christoffel symbols, 1089
  equations of motion for matter, 1087ff
    baryon (rest mass) conservation, 1088
    energy conservation law, 1088
    Euler equation, 1088
  post-Galilean transformations, and invariance, 1085
  velocity of coordinate frame relative to universal preferred frame, 1083f, 1098, 1114
  applications of
    total mass-energy of a body calculated, 1091, 1094, 1099, 1125f
    gravitational field of isolated, spherical sun, 1097ff
    gravitational field of sun with quadrupole moment, 1115
    gravitational field of rotating Earth, 1119
    why high-speed particle motion probes only the parameter γ, 1099ff
    propagation of light and radio waves, 1099–1109
    deflection of electromagnetic waves by sun, 1101ff
    radar time-delay in sun's gravitational field, 1103, 1106–1109
    many-body ("EIH") equations of motion, 1091, 1094f
    equation of motion for a spinning body, 1120f
    perihelion shift, 1110–1116
    three-body effects in lunar orbit, 1116
    precession of a gyroscope, 1117–1120
    Cavendish gravitational constant derived, 1125f
Partial differential equations,
  applications of differential geometry to, 198
  rationale of analyzing, 485
Particle-physics experiments as tests of special relativity, 1054f, 1060. *See also under* Conservation laws.
Particles. *See* Pairs; Conservation laws
Passive vs. active transformations, 1140
"Past of." *See* Causal relationships
Path integral. *See* Feynman's sum over histories
Pauli principle, as test of Riemannian geometry, 398–399
"Peeling theorem," in radiation theory, 1165
Perfect cosmological principle, 745
Perfect fluid
  defined, 132, 140
  stress-energy tensor for, 132, 140
  See also Hydrodynamics
Perihelion shift, 391f
  for nearly circular orbits in exact Schwarzschild geometry, 670
  in post-Newtonian limit of general relativity, 1110–1116
  in PPN formalism, 1110–1116
  in linearized (spin-2) theory, 183f, 446
  in spin-0 and spin-1 theories of gravity, 179
  observational data on, 1112f
  Einstein on, 433
Permutation tensor (*same as* alternating tensor), 126, 128f, 207, 343
Perturbation theory for spacetime geometry
  general formalism
    connection coefficients in terms of metric perturbation, 966–967
    curvature tensors in terms of metric perturbations, 966–967
    action principle for metric perturbations, in vacuum, 972f
    gauge transformations, 967ff
    stress-energy of metric perturbations in shortwave limit, 969
  applications
    shortwave approximation for gravitational waves, 964–973
    pulsation of relativistic stars, 688–699
    slow rotation of a star, 699
    to Friedmann cosmology, 800f
    to collapsing star, 844ff
    stability analyses of Schwarzschild and Kerr holes, 884f
Petrov-Pirani classification of spacetimes, 902
Phase, of de Broglie wave, 53–55
Phase, in geometric optics, 571f, 574f
Phase space, 126, 584f, 590
Photons
  splitting, forbidden for plane wave, 70
  world lines of, 388
  kinetic-theory description of, 587–589
  in geometric optics, 580
Physical optics, correspondence with geometric optics, 412
Piercing of surfaces, of a form. 55f, 60, 99, 202, 231
Piezoelectric strain transducer, 401
Pit in the potential, 636–637
Planck length
  defined, 10
  relevance to fluctuations in geometry, 10, 1180, 1192ff
Plane electromagnetic waves in curved spacetime, 961–962
Plane gravitational waves, exact
  form of metric, 957
  field equations and solution for a pulse of waves, 958–959
  linearized limit of, 958
  Riemann curvature of, 959
  global structure of spacetime, 958–960
  effect on test particles, 960–961
  comparison with exact electromagnetic plane wave, 961–963
  stress-energy of, 963
  in language of shortwave approximation, 962–963
Plane gravitational waves in linearized theory, 945f, 949, 1004ff
Planetary orbits
  periodic relativistic effects in, 1009, 1011
  deviations from geodesic motion, 1111, 1126–1131
  See also Keplerian orbits, Perihelion shift

Plateau, problem of, 877
Poincaré transformation, 68
Positive sense. *See* Orientation
Poisson bracket, 654
  generalized, 486
Poisson's equation for Newtonian gravitational potential, 290, 299, 301
Polarization of a gravitational wave
  tensors defined 953f, 971
  plane (linear), 952f
  circular, 953f
  elliptical, 955
  compared with that of an electromagnetic wave, 952–954
  rotational transformation of states, 954
  parallel transport of, in geometric-optics limit, 971
  line-of-force diagram, 1011–1012
Polarization of a neutrino, 954
Polarization of radiation fields with arbitrary spin, 954–955
Polarization vector for electromagnetic waves, 573ff, 577f, 581
Post-Galilean transformations, 1085
Post-Newtonian approximation to general relativity, 1069
  obtained from PPN formalism, 1073
  derived by post-Newtonian expansion of field equations, 1089f
  stellar structure and stability analyzed using, 1073
  many-body ("EIH") equations of motion, 1091, 1094f
  See also Parametrized post-Newtonian formalism
Post-Newtonian expansion procedure, 1075ff. *See also* Parametrized post-Newtonian formalism.
Post-post-Newtonian approximation, 1069, 1077
Post$^{5/2}$-Newtonian approximation and its relationship to radiation damping, 1077
Potentials, effective. *See* Effective potentials
Pound-Rebka-Snider experiment, 1056ff
Poynting flux, 122, 140f, 481, 550
Precession
  of perihelion. *See* Perihelion
  of spin axis. *See under* Spinning body
Precession component, of Einstein field, 547
Preferred-frame theories of gravity, 1083, 1093, 1098, 1123ff
Preferred-frame effects, experiments to search for, 1098, 1113f
Pregeometry, 1203–1212 *passim*
  as calculus of propositions, 1208–1209, 1211–1212
Pressure, in stress-energy tensor for a perfect fluid, 132
Price's theorem, 863, 866
Primordial fireball. *See* Cosmic microwave radiation
Principal null congruences of Weyl tensor
  defined, 902
  for Kerr-Newman geometry, 901–904
Prior geometry, 429ff, 1068, 1070f
Probability amplitude
  for a history, 419
  phase of, given by action, 486, 491
Projection operator for transverse-traceless part of a tensor, 948
Projection tensors, 565f
Propagator, mentioned, 120
Proper distance. *See* Interval, Lorentz
Proper reference frame of an accelerated (or unaccelerated) observer
  constructed, 327–332
  metric, 331f
  connection coefficients, 330f
  inertial and Coriolis forces, 332
  applied to definition of thermodynamic potentials, 557f
  applied to analysis of gravitational-wave detector, 1005–1010, 1012
Proper time. *See* Interval, Lorentz
Pseudotensors of stress-energy for gravitational field, 465f
  do not localize gravitational energy, 466f
  order of magnitude of, 996, 999f
  used in analyzing generation of gravitational waves, 996–999
  for waves, averaging gives stress-energy tensor, 972
Pulsars
  discovery of, 620, 762
  theory of, 628, 630
  timing data as a probe of neutron-star structure, 628, 630
  experimental tests of general relativity using, 1047
  in idealized experiment on "prior geometry," 430
  See also Neutron stars

Q

Q of an oscillator, 1025
Quadrupole-moment parameter for sun, J_2, 1112f, 1115
Quadrupole moment, 977
  coupling to curvature produces
    departures from geodesic motion, 476–480
    precession of spin axis, 391f
  reduced, 977
    as integral over mass distribution, 975, 977
    as trace-free part of second moment of mass distribution, 977
    as coefficient in $1/r$ expansion of Newtonian potential, 991
    and generation of gravitational waves, 975, 991–994
Quantum fluctuations
  in electromagnetic field, 427, 1190f
  in geometry of spacetime, 419, 480, 1190–1194, 1202
  and zero-point energy of particles and fields, as responsible for gravity, 426ff
Quantum geometrodynamics
  commutation of observables in, on spacelike hypersurface, 554
  ideas of Penrose and Hawking on, 936, 938, 940
  See also Pair production, Quantum fluctuations
Quantum theory
  angular momentum commutators, 236
  general operators, 236
  correspondence principle, 413
  particle self-energies, 474f
Quantum propagator, 1194
Quasars, 761f
  distances to, controversy over, 767
  evolution of population, 767f, 770
  models for energy source, 634–635, 687
  use in experimental tests of general relativity, 1047f, 1061, 1101, 1103ff
Quaternions. *See* Spin matrices

R

Radiation, description of spectrum, 588
  specific intensity I_ν defined, 587, 589
  specific flux F_ν defined, 1025
  flux F defined, 782
  conservation of I_ν/ν^3 (Liouville's theorem), 587–588
  redshift of temperature of black-body radiation, 588
Radiation, electromagnetic
  pictorial explanation of $1/r$ behavior, 110f
  and causality, 110
  of oscillating dipole, 111–112
Radiation, gravitational. *See* Gravitational waves
Radiation reaction, 474, 993f
Radiation zone, 997
Radar time delay in Sun's gravitational field, 1048, 1103, *esp.* 1106–1109
Radio sources, cosmic, 759–762
  isotropy on sky, 703
  See also Quasars
Radius of closed Friedmann universe, 704f
Raising indices. *See* Index manipulations
Rays, in geometric optics, 573ff, 581f
Redshift, cosmological
  independent of wavelength, 775
  "tired light" does not explain, 775
  derivations
    from standing waves, 776
    from wave-crest emission, propagation, and reception, 777f
    using symmetry-induced constant of geodesic motion, 777, 780
  used to characterize distances and times in universe, 779
  contrasted with Doppler shift, 794
  of particle energies and de Broglie waves, 780

Redshift (*continued*)
of cosmic microwave radiation, 764–765, 779
in anisotropic cosmology, 801
See also under Cosmology
Redshift
Doppler, 63f, 794
due to "ether drift," 1064f
of radiation from a collapsing star, 847, 849f, 872
Redshift, gravitational, for gravitational waves, 956f, 968
Redshift, gravitational, for photons
compared with 1970 clock technology, 1048
experimental results, 1058, 1060
Pound-Rebka-Snider experiment, 1056–1058
in solar spectum, 1058–1060
equivalence principle tested by, 189f, 1056
geodesic motion tested by, 1055–1060
implies spacetime is curved, 187–189
derivation
from energy conservation, 187
from geodesic equation in generic static metric, 657, 659
in linearized theory, 446f
Redshift, gravitational, for temperature, 568, 685
Redshift parameter, *z*, defined, 187
Regge-Wheeler radial coordinate, *See* Tortoise coordinate
Reference system. *See* Coordinate system, Inertial frame, Lorentz frame, Proper reference frame
Regge calculus,
surveyed, Chap. 42
suitable for low-symmetry geometrodynamics, 1166
geometry determined by lengths, 1167
simplexes and deficit angles, 1167–1169
skeleton geometry, 1169
hinges, 1169
continuum limit of, 1169
blocks associated with one hinge, 1170
variational principle for geometrodynamics, 1170
flow diagram for, 1171–1172
initial-value data in, 1172
Einstein's geometrodynamic law, expressed in, 1173
choice of lattice structure, 1173–1177
supplementary vertices in, 1176
facing, packing, and right-through blocks, 1176
count of faces, 1177
choice of edge lengths, 1177–1178
applications and future of, 1178–1179
Reissner-Nordstrøm geometry
derivation of metric, 840–841
Kruskal-like coordinates for, 841
coordinates with infinity conformally transformed, 920
global structure of, 920–921
throat for $Q = M$ identical to Bertotti-Robinson universe, 845
uniqueness of (Birkhoff-type theorem), 844ff
as limiting case of Kerr-Newman, 878
Reversible and irreversible transformations in black-hole physics, 889f
Relative acceleration. *See* Geodesic deviation
Relativity. *See* Special relativity; General relativity
Renormalization of zero-point energy of particles and fields, 426ff
"Reprocessing" of universe, 1209, 1213–1217
Retarded fields and radiation reaction, 474
Retarded potential, 121
Ricci curvature. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
Ricci rotation coefficients. *See* Connection coefficients
Ricci rotation 1-forms. *See* Rotation 1-forms.
Riemann. *See under* Curvature, formalism of
Riemann normal coordinates, 285ff, 480–486
Riemannian geometry
characterized, 242, 304f
track-1 treatment of, Chap. 8
track-2 treatment of, Chap. 13
Riemann's founding of, 220
of apple, is locally Euclidean, 19–21
of spacetime, is locally Lorentzian, 19–23
See also specific concepts, such as Metric, Connection
Robertson-Walker line element, 722, 759
Rods, 301, 393, 396–399
Roll-Krotkov-Dicke experiment. *See* Eötvös-Dicke experiments
Rotation
as stabilizer of stars, 633f
rigid-body, 123f
of universe, limits on, 939
"Rotation"
of a field of 1-forms, 123f
of a field of 4-velocities, 566
of rays, in spinor language, 1165
Rotation group, $SO(3)$, manifold of
generators, 242–243, 264
structure constants, 243, 332
geodesics and connection, 264, 332
Riemann curvature, 288
metric, 332
isometric to 3-sphere, 725
used in constructing mixmaster cosmological model, 807
Rotation matrices. *See* Spin matrices
Rotation 1-forms $\omega^{\mu}{}_{\nu}$, 350–354, 360
matrix notation for, 359
See also Covariant derivative, Connection coefficients
Rotation operators. *See* Spin matrices
Rotations
in coordinate plane, 67
composition of, 1135–1138
Rodrigues formula, 1137
represented as two reflections, 1137ff
half-angles arise from reflections, 1137
infinitesimal, 170f, 1140ff
Rutherford scattering, 647, 669
relativistic corrections to, 669f

S

Saddle points, number of, 318
Sakharov view of gravitation, 426–428
Scalar field
stress-energy tensor, 483
equation of motion, from Einstein's field equation, 483
propagation in Schwarzschild geometry, 863, 868ff
Scalar product of vectors, 22, 52f, 62
Scalar-tensor theories of gravity. *See under* Gravitation, theories of
Schild's argument for curvature, 187–189
Schild's ladder,
described, 249
applications, 251–253, 258, 263, 268, 278
Schwarzschild coordinates
for any static, spherical system, 597
for Schwarzschild geometry, 607
pathology at gravitational radius, 11, 823–826
for a pulsating star, 689
Schwarzschild geometry, 822
in extenso, Chaps. 25, 31
as limiting case of Kerr-Newman, 878
Birkhoff's theorem for, 843–844
derivation from
full field equations, 607
initial-value equation, 538
coordinate systems and reference frames
Schwarzschild coordinates, 607, 823–826
isotropic coordinates, 840
Novikov coordinates, 826–827
ingoing Eddington-Finklestein coordinates, 312, 828f, 849
outgoing Eddington-Finklestein coordinates, 829ff
Kruskal-Szekeres coordinates, 827, 831–836. *See also* Kruskal-Szekeres coordinates
tortoise coordinate, 663, 665f
coordinates with infinity conformally transformed, 919f
orthonormal frames, 821
Riemann curvature, 821ff
structure and evolution
Einstein-Rosen bridge (wormhole), 837ff, 842f
topology, 838ff
not static inside gravitational radius, 838
evolution, 838ff, 842

embedding diagrams, 528, 837, 839
diagram of causal structure, 920
singularities. *See* Singularities of Schwarzschild geometry
singularities at $r = 0$. *See under* Singularities.
explored by radially infalling observer, 820–823
destruction of all particles that fall inside gravitational radius, 836, 839, 860–862
test-particle motion in
in extenso, Chap. 25
analyzed using Hamilton-Jacobi theory, 649
analyzed using symmetry-induced constants of the motion, 656–672
orbit lies in a "plane," 645f, 655
conserved quantities for, 656
angular momentum, 656ff
energy-at-infinity, 656ff
effective potential for radial part of motion, 639, 656, 659–662
qualitative description of orbits, 662
radial orbits, details of, 663–668, 820–823, 824–826, 835
nonradial orbits, details of, 668
circular orbits, stability of, 662
binding energy of last stable circular orbit, 885, 911
periastron shift for nearly circular orbits, 670
scattering cross section, 669f
deflection angle, 671
photon motion in
shape of orbit, 673, 677
effective potential for radial part of motion, 673f, 676
qualitative description of, 674f
impact parameter, 672
critical impact parameter for capture, 673
escape versus capture as a function of propagation direction, 675
scattering cross section, 676–679
capture cross section, 679
wave propagation in
effective potentials for, 868, 870
scalar field, analyzed in detail, 863, 868ff
electromagnetic field, Newman-Penrose constants, 870f
fields of zero rest mass, integer spin, 866
Dirac equation in, 1164
perturbations of
high-frequency, analyzed by geometric optics, 640
wave equations for, related to Hamilton-Jacobi equation, 640
stability against small, 884
applications
as external field of a static star, 607
as exterior of a collapsing star, 846–850
matched to Friedmann geometry to produce model for collapsing star, 851ff
many Schwarzschild solutions joined in lattice to form closed universe, 739f
Schwarzschild lattice universe, 739f
Schwarzschild radius. *See* Gravitational radius
Schwarzschild surface. *See* Gravitational radius
Schwarzschild's uniform-density stellar model, 609–612
Second, changing definitions of, 23–29
Second law of black-hole dynamics, 931ff
formulated with assumptions ignored, 889, 891
reversible and irreversible transformations, 889f, 907–910, 913
used to place limits on gravitational waves from hole-hole collisions, 886
Second law of thermodynamics, 563, 567f
Second moment of mass distribution, defined, 977
Selector parameter
defined, 265–266
used in analysis of geodesic deviation, Chap. 11
"Self-energy," infinite, 474
"Self-force," 474
Semicolon notation for covariant derivative, 210
Semimajor axis of an elliptic orbit, 647
"Sense." *See* Orientation
Separation vector, 29ff, 218f, 265–270
"Shear"
of a congruence of world lines, 566
of a bundle of null rays, 582
in spinor language, 1165
Shear stress
idealized away for perfect fluid, 140
produced by viscosity, 567
in PPN formalism, 1074, 1075n
Shell crossing, 859
Shift function
as Lagrange multiplier, 487
metric interval as fixed by, 507
covariant and contravariant forms of, 507f
award of arbitrariness in, reversed, 532
two variational principles for, 538
Shock waves
hydrodynamic, 559, 564, 628
in spacetime curvature, 554
Signature, of metric, 311
Simple fluid, defined, 558
Simplex, 307, 380f, 1167ff
Simultaneity
in Newton, Minkowskii, and Einstein spacetime, 296
as term for spacelike slice. *See* Spacelike slice
Singularities, coordinate, 10–12
illustrated by Schwarzschild coordinates, 11, 823ff
Singularities in geometry of spacetime
definitions of, 934
theorems on creation of, 934ff, 936, 938, 762
structures of, 935, 940, 804ff
cosmic censorship vs. naked singularities, 937
in Schwarzschild geometry,
and evolution of the geometry, 838f
remote possibility that infalling objects might destroy, 840
and spherical gravitational collapse of a star, 846, 860ff
Mixmaster, 805–813
is generic, 806, 940
changing standards of time near, 813f
initial, of the universe, 769f
what "preceded" it? 769f
prospects for understanding, 707
should one worry about singularities?
Misner's viewpoint, 813f
Thorne's neutrality
Wheeler's viewpoint, 1196ff
unphysical, due to overidealization
surface layers, 552–556
shell crossings, 859
Signals, extraction of from noise, 1036–1038
Size
related to angular momentum, 162
of accelerated frame, 168f
Skeleton geometry, 309, 1169
Skeleton history, 499
Slicing of spacetime, 506. *See also* Spacelike slice
"Slot" in machine concept of tensor. *See* Tensor
Solar system, 752–756
ephemeris for (J.P.L.), 1095, 1097
relativistic effects in, magnitude of, 1048, 1068
Nordtvedt effect in, 1128
See also Earth, Moon, Planetary orbits, Sun, Experimental tests of general relativity
Space
Newtonian absolute, 19, 40, 291f
foamlike structure and quantum fluctuations, 1204
not spacetime, as the dynamic object, 1181
See also Manifold, Differential geometry, Differential topology, Affine geometry, Riemannian geometry
Space theory of matter, 1202–1205
Source counts in cosmology, 798
Spacecraft, used to test general relativity, 1108f, 1114
"Spacelike relationship to." *See* Causal relationships
Spacelike slice
as "moment of time" in spacetime, 713f
as the dynamic object in superspace, 423f, 1181
geometrodynamics and electrodynamics derived from physics on, 419–423

Spacelike slice (*continued*)
See also Embedding diagrams, Initial value, Three-geometries
Spacetime geometry
Newtonian. *See* Newton-Cartan theory of gravity.
Minkowskiian (Lorentz). *See* Lorentz geometry
Einsteinian
modeled by apple, 4
Riemannian character tested by stability of Earth, 398f
curvature of, implied by gravitational red shift, 187ff
stratification denied by locally Lorentz character of physics, 304f
viewed as a "gravitational field," 399f
as dynamic participant in physics, 337
response to matter, as heart of general relativity, 404
as classical approximation, 1181f
as classical leaf slicing through superspace, 1184
See also General Relativity, Geometrodynamics, Curvature of spacetime
Newtonian, Minkowskiian, and Einsteinian, compared and contrasted, 296, 437
Special relativity
briefly outlined, 47–48
spelled out, Chaps. 2–6
does not take in gravitation, Chap. 7
local validity as central feature of curved spacetime, 304f
See also specific concepts, e.g., Electromagnetic field, Lorentz transformations
Specific intensity, defined, 587, 589
Specific flux, defined, 1025
Sphere, 2-dimensional (S^2)
two coordinate patches to cover, 12
topology of, 241f
metric on, 340
Riemann tensor of, 341
Sphere, 3-dimensional (S^3)
volume of, 724
hyperspherical coordinates and metric for, 723f
Riemann curvature tensor, 721
embedding diagram, 723
compared with spheres of lower dimensionality, 704
isometric to manifold of rotation group, 725
Spherical symmetry, Killing vectors for, 658
Spherical systems, static
Schwarzschild coordinates for, 594–597
isotropic coordinates for, 595
orthonormal frames for, 598
rigorous derivation of line element, 616f
curvature tensors for, 360f
Spherical systems, dynamic
Schwarzschild coordinates for, 616f, 689
curvature tensors for, 361f
Birkhoff's theorem for, 883f
Spin, as nonclassical two-valuedness, 1204
Spin matrices
in law of combination of rotations, 1136
as quaternions or rotation operators, 1136
Hermitian conjugate of, 1138
algebraic properties, 1137–1142
and 3-vectors, 1140f
and 4-vectors, 1142f
associated spin matrices, 1152f
multiplication law for, 1153
Spinning body
equation of motion for, 1120f
transport law for spin
Fermi-Walker, in absence of curvature coupling, 165, 176f, 1117
modified by curvature coupling, 391f
spin precessions
"general," 391f
Thomas, 175f, 1118, 1145ff
frame-dragging, 1119f
due to space curvature ("geodetic"), 1119f
Spindown of black holes, 886
Spinors
general account, Chap. 41
and orientation-entanglement relation, 1148ff
defined by their law of transformation, 1148ff
conjugate complex, 1150
with dotted indices, 1150
correspondence with vectors, 1150ff
of higher rank, 1151
algebra of, 1151–1155
spinor equivalent of tensors, 1153f
spin space and basis spinors, 1156
flagpole plus flag plus orientation-entanglement relation, 1157–1160
in curved spacetime, 1164
analyze appearance of night sky, 1160–1164
as tool in gravitation theory, 1164f
Standard candle, 789
Standard hot big-bang cosmological model. *See under* Cosmology
Star clusters, relativistic, 621, 635
creation by evolution of a galactic nucleus, 634
analysis of structure, 679–683
equations of structure summarized, 683f
relativistic instability in, 621, 686f
collapse of, 884
possible roles in quasars and galactic nuclei, 634, 687
specific models
with purely circular orbits, 683
self-similar, 683
isotropic, 683f
isothermal, spherical, 685ff
Star operations. *See* Duality
Starquake, 628
Stars, evolution into final state, 621, 624, 627–629
Stars, Newtonian
equations of structure, 601–602, 605ff
gravitational energy, 606–607
uniform-density model, 609
pulsation theory
dynamical analysis, 697f
virial-theorem analysis, 1079f
volume-averaged analysis, 630f
Stars, relativistic, nonrotating
structure
in extenso, Chaps. 23, 24
equations of structure summarized, 608–609, 689
must be spherical, 593
Schwarzschild coordinate system, 597
isotropic coordinate system, 595
curvature tensors for, 360f
Newtonian limit of gravitational potentials, 595
parameters describing matter, 597–600
proper reference frame of fluid, 598
equations of structure derived, 600–606
Newtonian limit of equations of structure, 601–602, 605ff
mass-energy inside radius r, 602ff
must have $2m/r < 1$, 605, 612f, 615
total number of baryons, 606
external gravitational field. *See* Schwarzschild geometry.
monotonicity of r, 612–613, 615
embedding diagrams for, 613–615, 617
specific models
how to construct, 608f
Schwarzschild's uniform-density model, 609–612
Fermi-gas model with $\rho_c = \infty$, 615ff
numerical models for white dwarfs and neutron stars, 625ff, 696
radial pulsation of
dynamic analysis, 688–699
boundary conditions for, 694
eigenvalue problem for normal modes, 695f
Newtonian limit, 697f
post-Newtonian limit, 698f, 1080
stability of
critical adiabatic index for radial pulsations, 697ff
pulsational instability in massive stars, 632
relativistic instability, 605, 697ff
See also under White-dwarf stars, Neutron stars, Supermassive stars
collapse of. *See* Collapse, Gravitational
nonradial pulsation of, 984f
Stars, relativistic, rotating
slowly rotating, spherical stars, 699
rapidly rotating disks, 621
stabilizing effects of rotation, 633f
Stars. *See also* Binary stars, Cepheid variable stars, Neutron stars, Supermassive stars, White dwarfs

Static limit, 879ff, 894
Stationary gravitational field
  hydrostatic equilibrium in, 566
  thermal equilibrium in, 568
Steady coordinates, 964
"Steady flux of waves," defined, 1019
Steady-state cosmology, 745, 750, 770
Stokes theorem, generalized, 96f, 127
  content in pictures, 117
  Gauss's theorem as special case, 97, 150f
  applications, 96f, 125, 378
Stress. *See* Stress-energy tensor
Stress-energy pseudotensor. *See* Pseudotensor
Stress-energy tensor
  summarized, 131–132
  in extenso, Chap. 5
  as machine to reveal energy density, momentum density, and stress, 131f
  physical interpretation of components, 137f
  symmetry of, 141–142
  vanishing divergence, 152
  as functional derivative of Lagrangian, 485, 503ff
  specific form for
    nearly Newtonian fluid, 152, 154
    perfect fluid, 132, 140
    viscous fluid with heat flowing through it, 567
    stressed medium with no heat flow, 1086f
    swarm of particles (kinetic theory), 138f, 589f, 680, 682
    spherical star cluster, 680, 682
    photons in geometric optics limit, 579f
    geometric-optics waves, 579
    electromagnetic field, 139–140, 480ff
    scalar field, 504f
    gravitational field in spin-2 theory, 425
    gravitational field in general relativity. *Does not exist; see* Pseudotensor
Structure
  Cartan's equation of, 378
  constants, of rotation group, 243
  deformation of, 530
  differentiable, 242
  symplectic, of Hamiltonian mechanics, 125–126
  See also Global techniques, Horizons
Sum-for-inertia. *See* Mach's principle
Sum over histories. *See* Feynman's sum over histories
Summation convention, Einstein's, 9
Sun
  mass deduced from planetary orbits, 638, endpapers
  quadrupole moment, 1112f, 1115f, 1053f
  gravitational field in PPN formalism, 1097ff
  velocity relative to Galaxy, local group, and universe, 1114
  effect on tides, 44
  observed redshift of light from, 1058ff
  radiation flux negligible compared to pressure, 1075
  See also under Experimental tests of general relativity
Super-Hamiltonian
  contrasted with Hamiltonian, 488f
  for test-particle motion
    in electromagnetic field, 488f
    in gravitational field, 654
    in combined electromagnetic and gravitational fields, 897f
  for mixmaster cosmology, 809–813
Supermassive stars, 620f, 634
  convection in, 600
  entropy constant in, 600
  adiabatic index in, 633
  pulsational instability in, 632–633
  relativistic instability in, 605, 620, 633f
  rotation as a stabilizer, 633–634
  possible roles in quasars and galactic nuclei, 634
  See also Neutron stars, White dwarfs
Supernova, 619, 622
  Crab nebula created by, ii, 619f
  theoretical scenario for, 628
  as source of gravitational waves, 982, 987, 1040, 1042
Superspace, 1180–1183
  as starting point for Einstein's geometrodynamic law, 423
  quantum fluctuations, 1180
  spread-out wave versus wave packet, 1185
  conserved probability current in, 1189
  truncated, skeleton version, 1181
  mixmaster version ("minisuperspace"), 806
  of 2-geometries, 221
Surface integral. *See* Integration
Surface of last influence, 873f
Symmetry of tensor, indicated by round or square bracket, 126
Symmetry operations as tensors, 126, 128–129
Symmetries, more subtle than symmetry and antisymmetry, 86
Symmetries of spacetime. *See* Killing vector fields
Symmetrization, of tensor, 83
Synchronous coordinate system, 717. *See also* Gaussian normal coordinate system
Système International (SI) second, 28

T

Tails of waves in curved spacetime, 957, 864f, 869ff
Tangent space, 205, 227–231
  at neighboring points, linked, 246f, 252
Tangent vector. *See* Vector, tangent.
Taub-NUT space, 940
TCP, experimental tests of, 1054
Teichmüller space, 221
Temperature. *See* Thermodynamics
Temperature, redshift of, 568, 588, 685
Tensors
  summaries of formalism for manipulating
    in global Lorentz frame, 85
    in manifold without metric, 233f
    in curved manifold with metric, 203f, 223f
  machine-with-slots definition, 22, 74ff, 131, 133f, 233f, 310f
  ambiguity of slots removed by component notation, 84
  rank, defined, 75f, 234
  components of
    in Lorentz frame, 75f
    in general frame, 201–204, 312
  operations on, introduced in global Lorentz frame
    indices, raising and lowering, 75–76
    addition, 76
    multiplication by scalar, 76
    tensor product, 76
    basis tensors, 76
    gradient, 81–82, 84
    contraction, 82, 84
    divergence, 82
    transpose, 83
    symmetrization, antisymmetrization. 83, 85f, 126
    wedge product, 83
    duality, 85, 87, 88
    integration, 147ff
  algebraic operations extended to general frames, 201–207, 233f
  covariant derivative introduced, 208ff, 257–261
  Lie derivative introduced, 517
  spinor representation of, 1153–1155
Tensors, first rank. *See* Vectors, Forms, 1-forms
Tensors, second-rank symmetric, decomposition of, 947
Tensors, completely antisymmetric. *See* Forms, differential
Tensor density, 501f
"Test body," defined, 1050n
Tests of general relativity. *See* Experimental tests of general relativity
Test particle, freely falling, defines geodesic, 196
Test particles
  three needed to explore Lorentz force, 72
  more needed to explore Riemann curvature, 72
Tetrad
  carried by a uniformly accelerated observer, 169–170
  in Fermi-Walker transport, 170–171
  carried by accelerated observer, 328–332
Tetrahedron, 307, 309
Theories of gravitation. *See* Gravitation, theories of
Thermal conductivity. *See* Heat conduction

Thermal equilibrium in a stationary gravitational field, 568
Thermodynamics
  in extenso, 557–562
  basic references, 557n, 568
  basic concepts defined
    simple fluid, 558
    multicomponent fluid, 558
    baryon number density, 558
    density of total mass-energy, 558
    chemical potential, 558, 561, 562
    entropy per baryon, 558
    entropy 4-vector, 567
    temperature, 508
    heat-flux 4-vector, 567
    pressure, 558
    primary thermodynamic potential, 561
    physical free energy, 561
    chemical free energy, 561
    equations of state, 560
    adiabatic index, 692
    viscosity coefficients, 567
  laws and equations of
    law of heat conduction, 559
    Maxwell relations, 561, 564
    See also Conservation laws, baryons; First law of thermodynamics; Second law of thermodynamics; Equation of state
  extension of formalism when nuclear burning occurs, 558
  some applications and processes
    injection energy, 561f
    shock waves, 559
    pair production at high temperatures, 558
    chemical potential for an ideal Fermi gas, 565
  See also Hydrodynamics
Thin-sandwich conjecture, 534
Thomas precession, 175–176, 1118, 1146f
Three-geometry
  of initial and final spacelike hypersurfaces, 488
  as carrier of information about time, 488, 533
  fixed at surface in ADM formulation, 522
  conformal
    in York's formulation of initial-value problem, 540–541
    pure spin-2 representation via York curvature, 541
  YES vs. NO vs. quantum probability for, 1184f
  See also Initial value, Spacelike slice
Three-plus-one split of spacetime, 486, 505
  sandwiches and rigidification, 506
  via 3-metric plus lapse and shift, 506–507
  4-metric vs. 3-metric in, 508
  choice of slicing doesn't matter, 526
Tidal forces, 823, 860ff. *See also* Curvature of spacetime, Geodesic deviation
Tides, produced by sun and moon, 38, 44, 391f
Time
  standards of, 23–29
  defined so motion looks simple, 23–29
  end of, in gravitational collapse, Chap. 44
  many-fingered, 495, 498, 527
  proper. *See* Interval
  imaginary coordinate for, not used, 51
  Newtonian universal, 40, 299
  See also Bubble-time derivative, Clocks, Day
Time dilation, experimental tests of, 1054f
Tired light, 775
Tolman universe, 733
Topology, point-set, 241, 926n
Topology of spacetime
  various possibilities for Schwarzschild geometry, 837–840
  various possibilities for Friedmann cosmological models, 725
  Einstein vs. flat space views of, 437
  See also Differential topology
Torque of sun and moon on Earth, 391–392
Torsion
  not present in affine connection if equivalence principle is valid, 250
  vanishes in Riemannian geometry, 378
  possible incorporation into general relativity, 1049, 1068
Tortoise coordinate, 663, 665–666
Torus, three-dimensional, 284, 725
Transformations
  active vs. passive, 1140
  of tensors, 201–204
  of connection coefficients, 262
  of spinors, 1149f
Transpose of tensor, 83
Transverse-traceless gauge
  in linearized theory, 946–950
  in a curved background, 969
Trapped surface, 934, 936
Trivector, defined, 83
Tubes of force, 102, 114
Twin "paradox," 167
Two-length-scale expansion, 571f
Twistors, 937
Two-form. *See under* Forms, differential

U

Unified theory of electricity and gravitation, Riemann's unsuccessful search for, 32, 221
Uniqueness of free fall ("weightlessness," "weak equivalence principle"), 13–19, 197, 1050–1054
  formulation of this book, 1050
  Einstein's 1908 formulation, 5
  contained in Einstein's 1911 equivalence principle, 17
  experimental tests of 13–17, 1051–1054.
  See also Eötvös-Dicke experiment
Universal Time (UT0, UT1, UT2), 28
Universe. *See* Cosmological models, Cosmology

V

Variational principles for spin-0, spin-1, and spin-2 theories of gravity in flat spacetime, 178–181
Variational principles for test particle motion
  extremal proper time, 314–324
  "dynamic" principle, 322f
Variational principles for geometrodynamics
  Hilbert's, 434
    in extenso, Chap. 21
    in brief, 418, 485
    what fixed at limits, 485
    scalar curvature as integrand in, 491, 519
    grounded in quantum character of physics, 499f
    in space-plus-time split, 519f
    put into ADM form, 520
    Sakharov renormalization of, 426
  Hilbert's, by Palatini's method
    sketched, 491
    analogy with mechanics, 491–495
    analogy with electrodynamics, 495–498
    connection as independently variable in, 492
  Arnowitt, Deser, Misner
    in simplest form, 521
    exploited, 526
    specialized to mixmaster cosmology, 808f
  thin-sandwich, for lapse and shift, 538
  in shortwave approximation, 927f
  in Regge calculus, 1170
  in superspace formulation, 1186
Vector, tangent
  introduced, 8–13
  definitions of
    as arrow, 49
    as parametrized straight line, 49
    as derivative of point, 49, 205, 226–229
    as directional derivative operator, 205, 227–230
    manipulations summarized. *See under* Tensor
  formalism of, in global Lorentz frames,
    timelike, null, and spacelike, 53
    defining directional derivative, 59f
    correspondence to 1-form, 58ff
    from 1-form by raising index, 62
    test for linear dependence, 83
  transition to curved spacetime, 201–207, 230f
  commutator, 204
  formula for determining components of, 232
  transformation laws for, 230ff
  comparison by parallel transport, 245–263
  correspondence of, with spinors, 1150ff
  covariant components from spinor analysis, 1153
Vector, p-vector, 91
Vectors, three-dimensional (spatial), introduced, 64

Vector potential for electromagnetic field, in curved spacetime, 569f
Velocity 4-vector
  defined, 49
  components, 50
  unit length, 54
  related to energy-momentum 4-vector, 53f
Velocity parameter, in Lorentz transformation, 67
Vierbein. *See* Tetrad
Virial theorems in Newtonian theory of gravity, 1078
  evaluated for spherical stars, 607
Viscosity and viscous stresses
  formalism for, 567
  damping of primordial chaos by, 769, 802ff
Vlasoff equation, 680. *See also* Collisionless Boltzman equation
Volume, Hero-Tartaglia formula for, 307
Volume 1-form, 133–137
  4-volume, 147
  volume integrals, 147–151
Volume in phase space, 584–587, 590

W

"Wave-dominated detector," defined, 1019
Wave vector, 573ff
Wave function. *See* Probability amplitude
Wave operators
  d'Alembertian, 89, 120, 177, 183
  de Rham, for vector fields, 569
  Lichnerowicz-de Rham, for tensor fields, 382
  conformally invariant, 542
Wave number 1-form, 55–58
  related to energy-momentum 4-vector, 57
Weak equivalence principle. *See* Uniqueness of free fall.
Wedge product
  of tensors and of forms, 83, 91f
  rules for addition and multiplication, 92
  other names for, 83, 99
  of permutation tensors, 128f
Weight, of a tensor density, 501
Weightlessness. *See* Uniqueness of free fall
White-dwarf matter
  thermal pressures negligible, 599–600
  electron capture in, 619
  equation of state for, 624ff
White-dwarf stars, 619
  models for, 625–626
  Chandrasekhar mass limit, 619
  stability of, 605, 619, 626f, 696
Whitehead's theory of gravity. *See under* Gravitation, theories of
"Wire up" source to field, 367ff, 405
World line, 4, 13. *See also* Geodesic
World sheet, swept out by one face of 3-volume, 133
World tube, analysis of balance of 4-momentum in, 473
Wormholes in space
  and Betti numbers, 221
  of Schwarzschild geometry, 837ff, 842
  of Reissner-Nordstrøm geometry, 921
  probably do not exist in real universe at classical level, 842f
  at quantum level, 1200f, 1203
  electric charge as lines of force trapped in, 1200

X

X-ray diffraction, related to 1-forms, 232
X-ray sources, 761–762
X-rays from gas around black holes, ix, 885

Y

York momenta measure deformation, recoordinatization, and scaling, 542
York's curvature, 541
Young symmetry diagrams 86

Z

Zero-point energy, 426ff